

WASH ARNG PAM 870-1-4

WASH ANG PAM 210-1-4

WASHINGTON NATIONAL GUARD

PAMPHLET



**THE OFFICIAL HISTORY
OF
THE WASHINGTON NATIONAL GUARD
VOLUME 4
THE WASHINGTON NATIONAL GUARD IN THE
PHILIPPINE INSURRECTION**

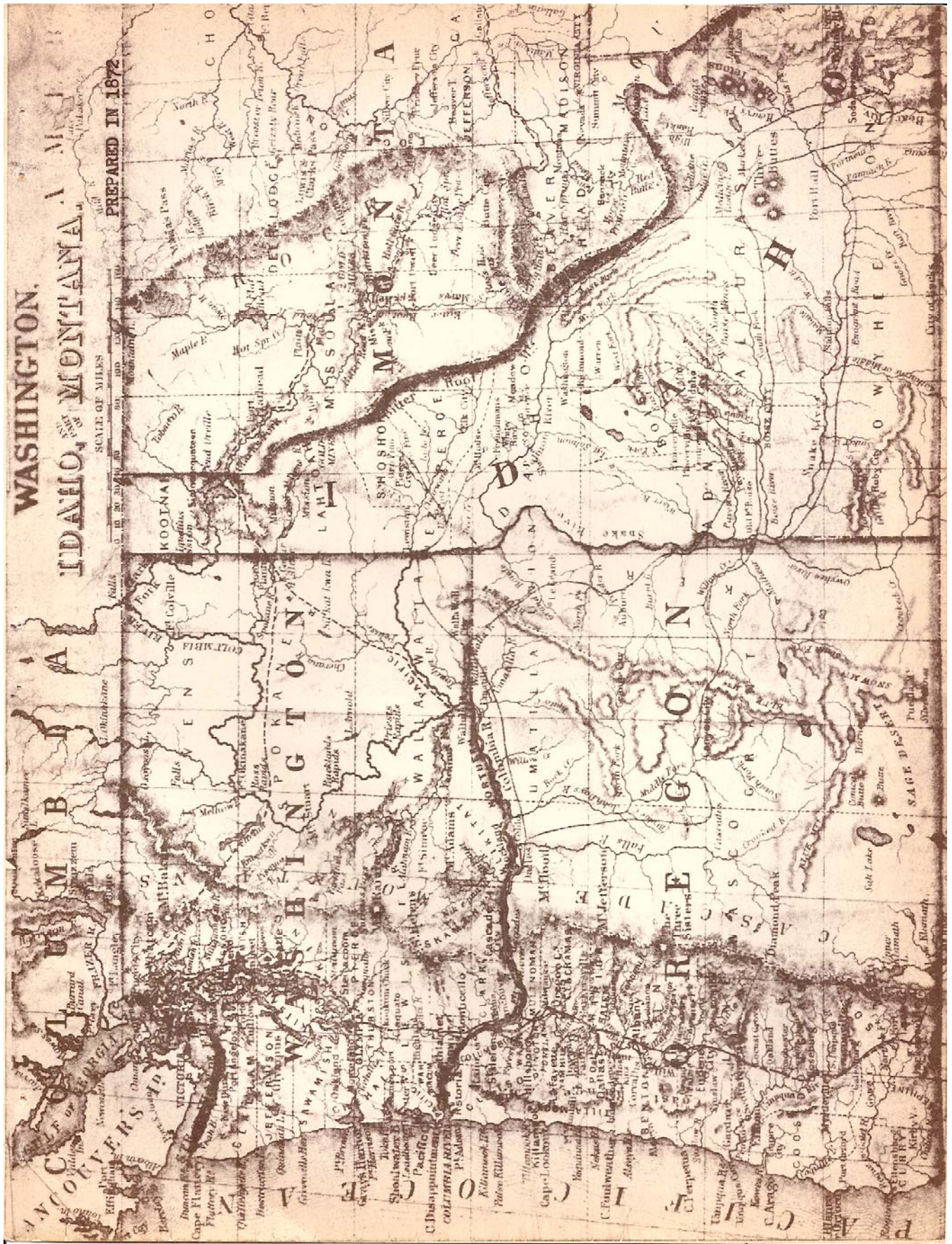
**HEADQUARTERS MILITARY DEPARTMENT
STATE OF WASHINGTON
OFFICE OF THE ADJUTANT GENERAL
CAMP MURRAY, TACOMA 33, WASHINGTON**

THIS VOLUME IS A TRUE COPY THE ORIGINAL DOCUMENT
ROSTERS HEREIN HAVE BEEN REVISED BUT ONLY TO PUT EACH UNIT, IF POSSIBLE,
WHOLLY ON A SINGLE PAGE AND TO ALPHABETIZE THE PERSONNEL THEREIN
DIGITIZED VERSION CREATED BY WASHINGTON NATIONAL GUARD STATE HISTORICAL
SOCIETY

VOLUME 4

WASHINGTON NATIONAL GUARD IN THE PHILIPPINE INSURRECTION

CHAPTER		PAGE
I	WASHINGTON TERRITORIAL MILITIA IN THE POST CIVIL WAR PERIOD	1
II	WASHINGTON TERRITORIAL MILITIA IN THE NEZ PERCE WAR OF 1877	7
III	WASHINGTON TERRITORIAL MILITIA IN THE BANNOCK INDIAN WAR OF 1878	41
IV	BEGINNING OF THE ORGANIZED MILITIA IN THE TERRITORY OF WASHINGTON	66
V	WASHINGTON TERRITORY ORGANIZED MILITIA IN THE CHINESE INCIDENT IN SEATTLE	89
VI	ORGANIZATION OF THE FIRST AND SECOND REGIMENTS, WASHINGTON NATIONAL GUARD	102
VII	EARLY USE OF THE WASHINGTON NATIONAL GUARD IN STATE EMERGENCIES	117
VIII	WASHINGTON NATIONAL GUARD IN THE PRE-PHILIPPINE INSURRECTION PERIOD	149
IX	WASHINGTON NATIONAL GUARD IN THE PHILIPPINE INSURRECTION, 1898-1899	169
X	ROSTERS OF FIRST REGIMENT OF WASHINGTON UNITED STATES VOLUNTEERS	174



CHAPTER I

WASHINGTON TERRITORIAL MILLITIA DURING THE POST CIVIL WAR PERIOD

Following the end of the Civil War and the mustering out of the First Washington Territory Infantry, the Indians in Washington Territory remained fairly peaceful thereby permitting the citizens of Washington Territory to recover their economy which had been wrecked by conflicts with the Indians during the past decade. However, in the adjacent State of Oregon and the Territory of Idaho, sporadic outbreaks by the Indians continued for the ensuing decade. It may be recalled that Major General Henry Wager Halleck had replaced Major General Irvin McDowell in command of the Division of the Pacific and had cited to General Grant the need for a Cavalry regiment on the Pacific Coast. His request was granted and War Department records indicate that elements of the First Cavalry Regiment were operating in the Oregon-Washington-Idaho area in July of 1866. although the Headquarters, Staff and Band of the regiment were then stationed at Benicia Arsenal, California. Base of operations of these and elements of the 14th Infantry was at Fort Walla Walla.

In the meantime, Major General George Crook had assumed command of the Department of the Columbia, vice Brigadier General Wright, drowned. General Crook was born in Ohio and entered the United States Military Academy from that state on July 1, 1848. He was breveted Second Lieutenant of the 4th Infantry regiment upon his graduation from West Point on July 1, 1852 and appointed a Second Lieutenant in the same regiment on July 7, 1853; First Lieutenant March 11, 1856; and Captain on May 14, 1861. Appointed a Brigadier General of the Volunteers on September 7, 1862, he served throughout the Civil War and was honorably mustered out of the Volunteer service as a Major General on January 15, 1866. He was then assigned to the 3rd Infantry Regiment on July 18, 1866 in the grade of Major. He was promoted to Lieutenant Colonel of the 23rd Infantry Regiment on July 28, 1866 and to Brigadier General of the regular army on October 29, 1873. During the Civil War he was breveted a Major on May 23, 1862 for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Lewisburg, West Virginia, and to Lieutenant Colonel for similar service on September 17, 1862 at the battle of Antietam, Maryland. In the battle of Farmington, Tennessee, he again was cited for gallant and meritorious service and was breveted a Colonel. Continuing his gallant service in the battles of West Virginia in 1864 and at Fisher's Hill, Virginia in 1864, he was breveted Brigadier General and Major General on March 13, 1865. He was promoted to Major General of the regular army on April 6, 1888 and died still in service on March 21, 1890.

In February and again in May of 1866, elements of the Second Battalion, 14th Infantry were engaged in operations against hostile Indians in the Jordan Creek area of Oregon and on the Owyhee River. Company I of the First Cavalry was engaged in several battles with the Indians in the Malheur-Lake Harney area in the latter part of August and again in September along Dunder and Blitzen Creek. During the remainder of 1866, Company I engaged in several more skirmishes in the John Day River-Trout Lake-Lake Albert and Harney Lake areas. These engagements continued in 1867. By this time most of the First Cavalry companies and one company of the 8th Cavalry were operating in Washington, Oregon and Idaho from Fort Walla Walla, Fort Boise and Camp Harney. In these engagements companies of the 23rd Infantry regiment were also used. These combined troops engaged in eighteen battles with the Indians in 1867 and in 1868 a total of twenty engagements were fought. Only major incident arising in Washington Territory during this period was at Neah Bay in April, 1866. Report of General Crook to the Secretary of War indicates that he dispatched First Lieutenant Amandus C. Kistler, 14th Infantry, with 130 men and two howitzers from Fort Steilacoom to quell an uprising. Arriving there on the 21st of April, he succeeded in putting the uprising to an end and returned with 18 prisoners, 6 of whom were tried for murder.

In the meantime, the citizens of Washington Territory, living in comparative peace, made little attempt to organize an effective territorial militia. However, the Legislative Assembly continued to regularly elect the officials of the militia as required by law. Only evidence uncovered during this period

are reports submitted by County Sheriffs giving the numbers of persons eligible for militia duty. These reports were apparently consolidated by the Territorial Adjutant General and submitted to the Adjutant General of the Army to enable the Territory to receive its regular quota of arms. Reports of the Quartermaster General published in the minutes of the Legislative Assembly indicate receipt of annual quotas for the Territory.

In 1869, troops of the regular army were stationed in Washington Territory as follows: Headquarters of both the First Cavalry and the 23rd Infantry were at Fort Vancouver; Company G, 23rd Infantry at Fort Colville; Company F, 23rd Infantry at San Juan; and Company L, Second Artillery manned the guns at Cape Disappointment. Troops at Fort Steilacoom had been moved to Alaska.

At its first Biennial session in 1869, the Legislative Assembly elected the following officials of the Territory Militia: William Huntington of Castle Rock as Adjutant General. Mr. Huntington at that time was United States Marshal of the Territory. He also served as Postmaster of Castle Rock. He continued in the office of Adjutant General until October of 1873 when he was replaced by Mr. Frank Guttenberg of Seattle. Mr. John M. Murphy of Olympia was reelected, Quartermaster General and served until October 1869, when he was replaced by Mr. F. M. Sargent. James McAuliff of Walla Walla was elected Commissary General and served until his term expired in 1869. Mr. James Crawford was elected in 1869 and served only a short time as Commissary General when he was replaced by Mr. Charles Wood of Jefferson County. Mr. Wood served until January 26, 1871 when the Governor appointed Mr. A. J. C. Clement Territorial Secretary to fill the unexpired term ending 29 October 1871. Mr. E. S. Fowler of Port Townsend was reelected Brigadier General of the Territorial Militia.

At their regular session in 1871, the Legislative Assembly elected Mr. R. C. Fay as Commissary General and Mr. Arthur Phinney of Port Ludlow as Brigadier general of the Militia. Mr. F. M. Sargent was reelected Quartermaster General. In October 1873, Mr. G. F. Thomas was elected Quartermaster General; Mr. E. A. Wilson of Port Townsend Commissary General and Mr. S. W. Hovey of Teekelet Brigadier General. In 1875, Guttenberg, Thomas and Wilson were all re-elected and Mr. Edward Shiel replaced Mr. Hovey as Brigadier General. This election was the last for the Legislative Assembly due to a change in the National Militia laws, which provided that all Militia Officers would thereafter be elected by the people at General Elections.

In 1871, the 23rd Infantry regiment was replaced by the 21st Infantry and the First Cavalry was withdrawn to Oregon and California. Companies C and I, 21st Infantry garrisoned Fort Vancouver; Company H, 21st Infantry was at San Juan; Company E, 21st Infantry at Fort Colville; and Company E, Second Artillery continued to garrison Cape Disappointment. Troops at San Juan were removed to Fort Townsend during the year, following the settlement of the San Juan imbroglio by the Emperor of Germany.

The estimated strength of Indians in Washington Territory by the Interior Department in 1872 was 13,792, of which 1200 were of the Puyallup tribe; 3600 Duwamish; 604 Makahs; 919 Klallams; 520 Quinalts; 3,000 Yakimas; 600 Chehalis and 3,349 Colvilles (Spokanes).

With the outbreak of the Modoc Indians in 1873, federal troops returned to Fort Walla Walla. Practically all the troops of the Department of the Columbia, some from California, and some militia volunteers participated in this engagement. During the epic battle in the Lava Beds from the 11th to the 20th of August, the following troops participated: Companies B, F, G, H and K, First Cavalry; Companies A, E, K, and M, 4th Artillery; Companies F and G, 12th Infantry; and Companies B, C, I and F, 21st Infantry. Although not a long war, it cost a half a million dollars and casualties of 120 officers and men. The strong position of the Indians in the Lava Beds added immensely to the resisting power of the Modocs and multiplied the labors of the troops. Brigadier General Edward E. S. Canby, who had replaced General Crook in command of the Department of the Columbia, had been opposed to the use of troops to start with. However, having been ordered to aid the peace commissioners, after being overruled in the use of troops, when he asked to do so, he was murdered on August 11, 1873 at the conference of the peace commission. He had been warned of the intention of the Indians, but refused to be armed or secure his safety by the easy method of deceiving the Indians. There is little doubt that General Canby,

as he walked at the head of the peacemakers on that fatal day, had said farewell to life and was giving himself as a victim to his high sense of duty. He was succeeded by Brigadier General Jeff C. Davis, recently returned from Alaska, who carried the campaign to a conclusion, caught, tried, and hung the murderers, including Captain Jack, their chief.

Brigadier General Jefferson Columbus Davis was born in Indiana and entered the military service as a private with the 3rd Indiana Volunteer regiment on June 22, 1846. He was appointed Second Lieutenant, 1st Artillery, US Army, on June 17, 1848; First Lieutenant on February 29, 1852 and Captain on May 14, 1861. He was appointed Colonel, Indiana Volunteer Infantry regiment on August 1, 1861 and to Brigadier General, Volunteers, on December 18, 1861. Honorably mustered out of Volunteer service on September 1, 1866, he was assigned to the 23rd Infantry as a Colonel. During the Civil War he was brevetted a Major on March 9, 1862 for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Pea Ridge, Arkansas; Lieutenant Colonel on May 15, 1864 for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Keneshaw Mountain, Georgia; and Major General March 13, 1865 for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Jonesboro, Georgia on August 8, 1864. He died on November 30, 1879 while still in the service.

During the battle with the Modocs, the citizens of Walla Walla, with Fort Walla Walla practically deserted, became alarmed and on April 24, 1873, formed a militia company under the Territorial Militia Laws. James McAuliff, former Commissary General of the Territory, was elected Captain; William Stokes, First Lieutenant; J. F. McLane, Second Lieutenant; B. W. Griffen, Orderly Sergeant; Ebb Taylor, Second Sergeant; A. J. McKay, Third Sergeant; and 42 others were enrolled. This company was called the "Washington Guards" and following the return of the troops to Fort Walla Walla, interest in the company languished due to lack of arms and equipment. During this same period, it is apparent that a Militia company existed in Olympia. One historian of that day mentions that in 1873, during a sit-down strike of railroad workers near Lakeview, south of Tacoma, this organization, known as the "Olympia Light Guards", was called out to quell the disturbance.

On September 1, 1874, Brigadier General Oliver Otis Howard succeeded Brigadier General Davis in command of the Department of the Columbia. General Howard came to Fort Vancouver with a very distinguished military career which had started on September 1, 1850 when he entered the United States Military Academy from Maine. Following his graduation on July 1, 1854, he was commissioned a brevet Second Lieutenant in the Ordnance Department. This brevet appointment was replaced by a regular commission on February 15, 1855 and he was promoted to First Lieutenant, Ordnance, on July 1, 1857. He resigned on June 7, 1861 to accept an appointment as a Colonel, 3rd Maine Infantry. He was promoted to Brigadier General, Volunteers on September 3, 1861 and to Major General, Volunteers on November 29, 1862. Honorably mustered out of the Volunteer service on March 19, 1866 he was appointed Brigadier General, U.S. Army to rank from December 21, 1864. During the Civil War he was brevetted Major General on March 13, 1865 for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Ezra Church and during the campaign against Atlanta, Georgia. He received the THANKS OF CONGRESS on January 28, 1864 for his inspired leadership in repulsing the Confederates at Gettysburg and was awarded the MEDAL OF HONOR on March 29, 1893 for distinguished bravery in the battle of Fair Oaks, Virginia on June 1, 1862 for leading the 61st New York Volunteer Infantry in a charge across the enemy line where he was twice severely wounded in the right arm necessitating its amputation. He retired on November 8, 1894.

Troops in the Department of the Columbia, location, commanding officers and strength in 1874 were as follows:

Post	Location	Commanding Officers	Units	Strength
Headquarters	Portland, Oregon	Brig Gen O. O. Howard	Dept. Staff	18
Fort Boise	Near Boise City	Capt. G. M. Downey	1 Co., 21st Inf	45
Cape Disappt.	Mouth of Columbia	Capt. F. G. Smith	1 Co., 4th Arty	50
Ft Colville	US-Canada Border	Capt. Evan Miles	1 Co., 21st Inf	49
Camp Harney	60 mi S of Canyon City, Oregon	Maj. Elmer Otis	3 Cos., 1st Cav & 21st Inf	162
Ft Klamath	Near Lake Klamath	Capt. J. Jackson	2 Cos., 21st Inf	109
Ft Lapwai	12 mi fr Lewiston	Capt. H. M. Smith	2 Cos., 21st Inf	120
Ft Stevens	Mouth of Columbia	Capt. M. P. Miller	1 Co., 4th Arty	58
Sitka, Alaska	-----	Capt. J. B. Campbell	2 Cos., 4th Arty	104
Ft Townsend	Near Pt Townsend	Capt. G. H. Burton	1 Co., 21st Inf	49
Ft Vancouver	18 mi N Portland	Col. A. Sully	1 Co., 21st Inf & Ord Det.	98
Ft Walla Walla	In W. W. Valley	Lt. Col. Frank Wheaton	5 Cos., 1st Cav & 21st Inf	254
				<u>Total 1,116</u>

Report of the Commissary General of the Army for 1873-1874 indicates the following was the average price paid for subsistence of the troops:

Beef 8.6¢ per pound (In Washington price was 6.95¢ and Oregon 6.89¢, - Pork 8.36¢ - Bacon 10.43¢ - Flour 4.22¢ - Hard Bread 5.34¢ - Corn Meal 2.43¢ - Beans 4.89¢ - Pease 3.59¢ - Rice 8.95¢ - Hominy 2.81¢ - Coffee 25.64¢ - Tea, Black 72.89¢ - Tea, Green 86.08¢ - Sugar 10.25¢ - Vinegar per gallon 22.84¢ - Candles per pound 18¢ - Soap 6.24¢ - Salt per pound 1/63¢- Pepper per pound 33¢.

The following extract from the Report of the Chief of Ordnance to the Secretary of War, October 9, 1875 is indicative of the reasons for the States' and Territorys' inability to maintain an effective Militia:

* * * * *

"This Bureau has, for several years past, called attention to the necessity of an increase to the annual appropriation for arming and equipping the Militia. The subject has been discussed in previous reports, and a mere reference to its importance to the interests of the whole country is now made. The annual appropriation of \$200,000 was made in 1808, when the population of the country was about eight millions. At the present time, with a population of over forty millions, the amount appropriated is still the same, and it is impossible for this Department to meet all the demands made upon it by the States and Territories. If it be the intention and desire of Congress, as expressed in the act of 1808, to provide "arms and military equipments for the whole body of the Militia of the United States", then the necessary means ought to be supplied by largely increasing the annual appropriation. The last official reports give the following as the aggregate strength of the Militia of the United States:

ORGANIZED. 84,724
UNORGANIZED (Enrolled) 3,701,977

and there is little doubt that were "arms and military equipments" more freely supplied, the organized force would be greatly enlarged. The hope is entertained that this may receive the attention of the proper committee, and that further legislation may be had at the next session of Congress".

During this period the Army was having considerable trouble with "deserters" assigned to stations in mid-western and western states. As a result the Inspector General was directed to look into the matter and make appropriate recommendations.

As a result the Commanding General of the Military Division of the Pacific was asked to make an investigation as to the causes for large numbers of desertions. In his report, Major General Schofield attributed them to the following three causes:

1st. Inattention on the part of officers to secure them proper and sufficient food.

2nd. Acts of officers and non-commissioned officers evincing prejudice or cruelty towards them.

3rd. The too hard labor required of them.

One Assistant Inspector General who visited the Department of the Platte had this to say about "deserters" and married soldiers:

1. Desertions - I find that our army contains many deserters. It is not uncommon to find men in the ranks who have deserted from the service four and five times, and in some cases as many as six and seven times. A remedy is much needed and should be devised to prevent this wholesale desertion, or at least to prevent soldiers who have once deserted the service ever re-entering it again.

In the Department of the Platte, soldiers convicted by court-martial of desertion or other serious offenses are sentenced (as a general thing) to be discharged the service and be sent to the Iowa penitentiary for the unexpired term of their enlistments. As far as this goes, it is very well; but there is no way of preventing these characters from re-entering the Army after being released from prison. There should be a law indelibly marked with a capital letter on the hip, indicating the offense for which he was imprisoned and discharged from the service.

This would in no way injure a man's prospects or chances for getting work, but would prevent his ever entering the Army again, a thing very much desired. If these desperate and hard cases could be kept from re-enlisting, a far better class of men would soon fill the ranks of our army.

Desertions from regiments serving in the Indian country might in a great measure be prevented by sending to companies none but thoroughly-instructed men to fill vacancies in the ranks. It would be better to keep recruits at the recruiting depots for two years, until well and thoroughly instructed in all their military duties.

Those men who enlisted with the intention of deserting, the drunkards, the thieves, etc., would show their hands long before the two years expired.

The expense of transporting these worthless characters to the Far West would be saved to the government, and the men sent to the regiments would prove valuable and efficient for the three remaining years of their enlistment.

* * * * *

2. Married Soldiers -***** Military posts are sometimes overrun with the wives of enlisted men. It is frequently the case the company commanders do not know the number of married men in their companies. These women manage to get shanties to live in, to have fuel, to eat, and in cases where the company changes station, to get transportation for themselves and effects; and in the majority of cases, the lumber for the construction of the shanties, the fuel, the rations, the transportation, etc, are made in some way out of the government.

It is well known that it requires about as much transportation to move four laundresses as it does to move a whole company of men.

In my opinion, laundresses (usually wives of enlisted men) can be dispensed with in the army, just as well as not. A man can be detailed on daily duty to do the washing of the company with the same

propriety as men are now detailed to do the cooking of the company. I cannot see why four or five men in a company should enjoy privileges that cannot be granted to all the men of the company. Doing away with laundresses would be a move in the direction of great economy.

The Inspector General in forwarding his report stated:

" The evidence adduced from our inspection reports justifies the conclusion that one of the chief causes of the numerous desertions from troops serving in the West, and especially within the mining-districts, may be found in the fact that labor there is in demand at much higher wages than soldiers receive from the government, and that the protection given to deserters by their employers generally precludes the possibility of their apprehension by the military authorities.

"That our soldiers are better fed, clothed, and paid than those of any other army in the world, and, as a general rule, are kindly treated and properly cared for, does not admit of a question; but they do not, any more than the frontier settlers who harbor and protect them, seem to look upon desertion as a violation of their oaths of enlistment, or as a crime of much turpitude. I am, therefore, fully impressed with the conviction that the remedy suggested in my last annual report would prove more efficacious in suppressing the evil than any other that has been suggested.

"It is, THAT DESERTION BE CONSTITUTED, BY LEGISLATIVE ENACTMENT, A FELONY COGNIZABLE BY OUR CIVIL COURTS OF CRIMINAL JURISDICTION, THE OFFENDERS TO BE ARRESTED BY MARSHALS AND DEPUTIES LIKE OTHER CRIMINALS: BUT THIS JURISDICTION TO BE CONCURRENT WITH THAT OF THE MILITARY COURTS.

"This, I am confident, would have the effect of educating and impressing the public mind with the proper sense of the heinousness of the offense, and prevent evil-disposed persons from giving aid and protection to deserters."

* * * * *

R. B. MARCY
INSPECTOR GENERAL, U.S.A

CHAPTER II

WASHINGTON TERRITORIAL MILITIA IN THE NEZ PERCE INDIAN WAR

Although the Nez Perce Indian War of 1877 was fought mainly in the adjacent State of Oregon and the Territories of Idaho and Montana, some reference must be made of this war in our history, inasmuch as Washington Territorial Militia participated therein as well as in the Bannock Indian War of 1878 which is covered in the following Chapter.

Again, as in previous volumes dealing with hostilities against the Indians, correspondence, telegrams, and general field orders from and to the commander of the Department of the Columbia will be used to tell the story, with a minimum of narrative by your compiler.

Major General Irwin McDowell, Commanding the Military Division of the Pacific in his annual report to the Secretary of War in 1876 stated that Joseph with his band of Nez Percés had appeared in the Wallowa Valley and demanded the surrender of two men, McNall and Finley, accused of killing one of his Indians, and threatened, in case his demand was not complied with, to destroy the farms of settlers therein, giving them a week's time to decide. General McDowell further advised that upon receipt of this intelligence, the Commanding Officer at Fort Walla Walla was at once directed to send one company of cavalry to the scene of difficulty. As a result, Company E, First Cavalry, under the command of First Lieutenant A. G. Forse, was dispatched to the scene immediately. He had an interview with Joseph, which resulted in his withdrawing his demands and threats, provided, the military authorities would use their endeavors to bring the accused men before the civil authorities for trial.

In his report, General McDowell called special attention to the fact that Joseph and his band consistently refused to live on their assigned reservation and asked that this matter be resolved by the appropriate agencies in Washington, D. C. As a result a commission was created by the Interior Department to inquire into the matter. Members were D. H. Jerome, Esquire, General O. O. Howard, USA, William Stickney, Esquire, A. C. Barstow, Esquire, and Major H. C. Wood, Assistant Adjutant General. Their report was submitted to the Secretary of War by the Secretary of Interior by the following letters and inclosures:

DEPARTMENT OF THE INTERIOR

Washington, March 7, 1877

Sir: I have the honor to transmit herewith a copy of a letter dated the 6th, instant, from the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, upon the subject of the removal of Joseph's band of Nez Perce Indians from the Wallowa Valley to the Nez Percés reservation in Idaho, under the control of Agent Monteith.

The recommendations of the Commissioner has the approval of this Department, and I have the honor to request that the commanding officer of troops in the Wallowa Valley be instructed to aid the Indian Office in effecting the removal of the Indians named to the Nez Percés agency.

The extract from the letter of Agent Monteith mentioned by the Commissioner is herewith inclosed.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

THE HONORABLE SECRETARY OF WAR

CHARLES T. GORHAM

Acting Secretary

INCLOSURE 1

DEPARTMENT OF THE INTERIOR
OFFICE OF INDIAN AFFAIRS
Washington, D.C., March 6, 1877

Sir: I have the honor to submit herewith, for the information of the War Department, an extract copy of a letter from John B. Monteith, United States Indian agent for the Nez Perces Indians, giving a detailed statement of his efforts to induce Joseph and his band of followers to abandon the Wallowa Valley and settle upon the Nez Perces reservation in Idaho.

If Joseph can be induced to surrender his claims to this valley and settle down into peaceful habits upon the Nez Perces reservation, by yielding to him the privilege of an annual visit of four to six weeks in the Im-na-hah Valley for hunting and fishing, I see no objection to granting such a favor, and have so advised Agent Monteith this day. The agent has been advised, however, that Joseph and his followers must obtain from him a pass to make this visit, or before absenting themselves from the reservation for any purpose, and at the same time agree not to molest settlers in the Im-na-hah Valley or interfere with their vested rights.

I fully concur in the views of Agent Monteith, that steps having been commenced for the removal of Joseph and his band, he should be made to realize that there can be no peace for him until he yields to this reasonable request of the government. To secure that end, and to secure it promptly and successfully, I have the honor to recommend that the honorable Secretary of War be requested to issue the necessary instructions to the officer in command of troops who were to be sent to occupy the Wallowa Valley, as contemplated in my report of the 6th of January last, upon this subject, to aid this department in the execution of some efficient plan for their peaceful removal to the Nez Perces agency.

I have the honor to be, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

J. Q. SMITH
Commissioner

THE HONORABLE THE SECRETARY OF INTERIOR

OFFICE INDIAN AGENCY
NEZ PERCES AGENCY
Lapwai, Idaho, February 9, 1877

Sir: In accordance with instructions contained in department letter, dated January 6, 1877, marked "L", I notified Joseph of the wish and purpose of the government in regard to him, his band, and all bands of roving Indians living off reservations.

I sent "Reuben" (head Chief and brother-in-law of Joseph), "James Reuben" (son of "Reuben), Whis-tas-kit", (Joseph's father-in-law), and "Captain John" to Joseph's camp, to talk to him and try to persuade him and his band to come on the reserve without any further trouble.

The four Indians named above as messengers to Joseph are Nez Perces, and friends of Joseph. The first night they spent with him, James Reuben informed Joseph and his people as to the nature of their visit, and of the wish of the government in regard to him, his band, and other like bands of roving Indians.

The four reasoned with and counseled them to come on the reserve without any further opposition, and take good farms. Joseph made no reply until the next day when he spoke as follows:

"I have been talking to the whites many years about the land in question, and it is strange they cannot understand me. The country they claim belonged to my father and, when he died it was given to me and my people, and I will not leave it until I am compelled to".

Others of the Indians expressed themselves in the same manner. Reuben tried hard to persuade them to give up and come on the reserve, but they persisted in their refusal.

There were present in the lodge where the council was held about forty Indians, and fifteen outside, which is the strength of the band who claims Joseph as their Chief.

There are other bands of Indians living on Salmon and Snake Rivers, who also refuse to move to reservations, and will not so remove, probably, until forced to do so.

I think, from Joseph's actions, he will not come on the reserve until compelled to. He has said so much to the Indians who have moved on the reserve, calling them cowards, etc, that he would be lowering himself in his own estimation, as well as in that of his immediate followers, did he not make some show of resistance. By making such resistance, he could say to the other Indians, "I was overpowered, and did not come of my own choice", in case he is forced on the Reserve.

When the four left them to return to the agency, Joseph and band were making preparations to go into the mountains near the Wallowa on a hunting excursion.

If they could be induced to come to the reserve, with the understanding that they would be allowed to go to the Im-na-hah four to six weeks annually, for the purpose of hunting and fishing, would the department so agree? So far as I am aware, there are no settlers in that valley - i.e. "IM-NA-HAH VALLEY" - and as the only way it can be entered is on horseback, over the mountains, I think it will be a long time before any settlers go there. The Imnahah River empties into the Snake River, and is a great salmon-fishing resort of the Indians. I think the commissioners who were here last fall would have been willing to have agreed to recommend that said fishing resort be reserved as a fishing-ground for the Indians, had Joseph shown a willingness to come on the reserve.

I have given Joseph until April 1, 1877, to come to the reserve peaceably. They can come one time just as well as another, having nothing to hinder them in moving.

I have gone as far as my instructions of the 6th ultimo will warrant, and now I respectfully ask for further instructions.

If the department intends to compel Joseph to comply with its wishes, I would recommend that the officer in command of the troops who are to occupy Wallowa Valley, in the interest of peace, be instructed to call on Joseph and inform him that unless he goes on the Nez Perces reserve on or before April 1, 1877, he will be forced to do so by the soldiers and also inform him that he must remain on the reserve, not leaving it without a pass from the agent at Lapwai. This would have the tendency to hurry him up and show him that the department is in earnest. If he is allowed to have his own way this time, it will only make him more stubborn in the future.

I have reserved enough land for them to locate on, and in the spring they could be provided with the agricultural implements as they need them.

One of the objections that is made by the Indians in question, as well as the Indians at present on the reserve, is the occupation of so much good land in the Lapwai Valley by Messrs Caldwell and Finley.

* * * * *

All of which is respectfully submitted, very respectfully,

JOHN B. MONTEITH
UNITED STATES INDIAN AGENT

HON J. Q. SMITH, COMMISSIONER OF INDIAN AFFAIRS
Washington, D. C.

The foregoing was transmitted by the Secretary of War to General McDowell on March 13, 1877 with instructions that he would "comply with the request of the Secretary of the Interior, the removal to be conducted by the agents of the Indian Bureau, the military authorities protecting and aiding them in the execution of their instructions". In turn the Commander of the Division of the Pacific forwarded the foregoing as follows:

HEADQUARTERS MILITARY DIVISION OF THE PACIFIC
AND DEPARTMENT OF CALIFORNIA

San Francisco, Calif, March 24, 1877

Sir: I am directed by the Division Commander to send you, and I do so herewith, an official copy of a communication dated March 7, 1877, from the Department of the Interior to the Secretary of War, transmitting a copy of a letter, dated 6th instant, from the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, upon the subject of the removal of Joseph's band of Nez Perces Indians from the Wallowa Valley to the Nez Perces reservation in Idaho, under the control of Agent Montieth. Accompanying the letter of the 6th is an extract from Agent Montieth's letter of February 9, 1877.

The division commander desires your special attention to the endorsement on the foregoing papers, dated Headquarters of the Army, March 13, 1877. This in connection with the orders given you by the General of the Army, dated January 13, 1877, in transmitting to you, through the division headquarters, a copy of the communication dated the 6th of January 1877 from the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, relative to the occupation by the military of the Wallowa Valley, Oregon.

By the orders of January 13 given you by the General of the Army, you are to comply with the request of the superintendent of Indian Affairs IN THE INTEREST OF PEACE (underlining is by the division commander).

By the endorsement of March 13, the action to be taken by the military is further qualified as follows:

"The removal to be conducted by the agents of the Indian Bureau, the military authorities MERELY PROTECTING AND AIDING THEM in execution of their instructions".

The division commander has examined the various papers transmitted from the headquarters of the Army, hereinbefore referred to, and it seems to him that the Indian Bureau anticipate possible, not to say probable, resistance to the demand on Joseph to remove to the reservation. In fact, the case seems not unlike that of the recent difficulties with the Sioux, which resulted in the war last year against these Indians.

It is therefore, of paramount importance that none of the responsibility of any step which may lead to hostilities shall be initiated by the military authorities. You are to occupy Wallowa Valley IN THE INTEREST OF PEACE. You are to comply with the request of the Department of the Interior, as set forth in the papers sent you, to the extent of MERELY PROTECTING AND AIDING THEM IN THE EXECUTION OF THEIR INSTRUCTIONS.

I am further to state, by order of the division commander, that if, in your judgment, in taking away the cavalry company from Fort Harney, it is now prudent to leave the post in charge of the company of infantry, he will send there the company of cavalry from Camp Bidwell; but as this will make it necessary to send up another company to replace the latter, and this from a great distance, requiring time and involving expense, when the allotment of Army transportation is low, he wishes to avoid doing so if it is possible.

He desires to hear from you on this point. As this question of the removal of Joseph's band is a very delicate and important one, the division commander directs that it be done under your personal direction, if practicable.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

SAMUEL BRECK
Assistant Adjutant General

TO THE DEPARTMENT COMMANDER
DEPARTMENT OF COLUMBIA
PORTLAND, OREGON

On April 19, 1877, the Secretary of the Interior sent to the War Department a copy of a letter of March 9, 1877, from Agent Montieth, detailing an interview had by him with "Olicutt", Joseph's brother, pertaining to the removal of the Nez Perces from Wallowa Valley to the Nez Perces reservation. This was referred to General Howard by endorsement from the Adjutant General as follows:

HEADQUARTERS OF THE ARMY, ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE
Washington, April 26, 1877

Official copy respectfully referred to the commanding general Department of the Columbia, through Headquarters Military Division of the Pacific. The General of the Army is of the opinion that the Indian Bureau should resolve to remove the Indians or not according to their interpretation of the treaty, and that the Army should only aid them to execute the resolve when made.

E. D. TOWNSEND
Adjutant General

The foregoing was indorsed to General Howard by order of General McDowell without any further instructions. On May 21st, General Howard sent the following telegram of the measures taken to comply with the foregoing:

Portland, Oregon

"Returned Portland, evening of the 19th. Non-treaty Nez Perces constrained compliance with order of government, Thirty days allowed to gather scattered people and stock. Location on reservation selected and agreed upon. Troops enough left in vicinity under commander Lapwai to enforce agreement case draw back. Some 500 wanderers from Umatillas and Yakima agencies still roaming - would join hostiles case outbreak. Told them to talk their own seeking government requirement they go upon reservation. Please ask Agent Wilbur be designated by telegram. Indian Bureau cooperate with me for these Indians, as Agent Montieth has well done for Nez Perces. Wish one head. Wilbur best man every way."

On May 22, General Howard made a full report of his action in the matter which was forwarded to Headquarters of the Army arriving on June 8, 1877. In the meantime, General Howard reported the start of hostilities by these Indians on June 15, 1877.

The following is a report made by Brigadier General O. O. Howard on his operations against the Nez Perce Indians:

Headquarters Department of the Columbia
In the Field, Camp Ebstein, Henry Lake, Idaho
August 27, 1877

Colonel: For the information of General McDowell, and to enable him to mention our operations in his annual report, I will furnish such brief account as I can during the active campaign. I would like the privilege of making a full and connected supplementary report embracing operations of other of my troops than those in this column after my return to my Department. You already know the steps that were taken as required by orders to put renegade Nez Perces and other wandering bands of Indians upon their proper reservations.

My efforts in conjunction with Colonel E. C. Watkins, the inspector of the Interior Department, and the Indian Agents concerned were apparently completely successful on June 14th, the date of my arrival at Lapwai.

The Indians belonging to Joseph, from Wallowa, to White Bird, from Salmon River, and to Looking Glass, from the Clearwater, were then assembled near Cottonwood Creek, on the borders of the Lapwai Reserve. As they seemed to hesitate at the last moment to fulfill the promises made to me thirty days before, I directed Captain David Perry, First Cavalry, to send a small detachment of men thither to

observe and bring back report; detachment to start early the 15th. Meanwhile, just at dark, a citizen, Mr. L. P. Brown, gets a letter to me from Mount Idaho, expressing suspicions of Indians keeping faith.

Friday, June 15th. The detachment having proceeded part of the way, returns at 12 M, with two Indians, much excited. They report four citizens on John Day's creek killed. Murderers, three or four in number, had rushed into Indian's Camp, and talked excitedly. White Bird mounted his horse, rode around and avowed that the Indians would not go to the reservation. I then go at once with the reporting Indians to Colonel Watkins, and Indian Agent Montieth, at Nez Perces Agency. After examination, it seems to have been a private quarrel, according to Indian story. Colonel Watkins sends the head chief and Joseph's father-in-law immediately toward Indian Camp. At 4:30 P. M., these Indians, with Mr. West and Looking Glass's brother, returned with letters from Mount Idaho, one letter dated 7 and the other 8 A. M. the same morning. These letters gave detailed accounts of massacres already begun. Captain Perry's (F) and Trimble's (H) companies of First Cavalry, that were by my direction already being prepared from first report of outbreak - these being the only cavalry within reach for the emergency - were dispatched without delay to the scenes of the disturbance. They numbered 99 men. As Captain Perry had no officer with his company, unless he took the post Quartermaster, Lieutenant Bomus, I detailed Lieutenant Theller, 21st Infantry, to his command. The troops marched all night, found the Indians gone from Cottonwood, so proceeded on to Grangeville, and thence, after an hour's rest, through the next night to the head of White Bird Canyon. Having made a forced march of upwards of 70 miles, with the loss of two night's sleep, they came in sight of the Indian camp, a few miles below the canyon.

Assisted by eleven volunteers from Mount Idaho, Captain Perry proceeds at once to assault the Indians, that everybody expects are hastening with all speed to cross the Salmon. Unexpectedly the assault was not successful. The Indians turn the left flank of the command, and with more than double Perry's numbers force him to retire from his position and return fighting all the way to Grangeville. His losses are 33 enlisted men and one commissioned officer, Lieutenant Theller, killed (2 wounded). The battle occurred, as I have indicated, the 17th of June. I refer to Captain Perry's report for a detailed account of the engagement. More than twenty people on Camas Prairie, White Bird Canyon, and vicinity, have been reported as murdered, accompanied in several cases with horrible outrage, so that the terror and excitement in the whole community were extreme. This precipitated the encounter, and I have only high commendation for the conduct of Captain Perry and his officers for an effort that deserved better results. He remained with his remnant at Grangeville till re-enforced and re-supplied. Meantime at 5 P. M., June 15th, I start my aid-de-camp, Lieutenant M. C. Wilkinson, to telegraph orders from Walla Walla, W. T., and to send dispatches to Wallowa by messenger, so as to concentrate at Lewiston a sufficient force to make the effort successful beyond doubt against the treacherous bands now combined.'

Upon arrival of Lieutenant Wilkinson in Walla Walla, action was immediately initiated by Walla Walla citizens to organize a volunteer company of Militia to go to the assistance of General Howard. This participation by Washington Territorial Militia can best be told by a letter written by one of the members of this company Mr. W. S. Clark which was written on September 21, 1917 from notes which he made at the time:

* * * * *

"On the morning of June 19th, 1877, a courier reached the city of Walla Walla, bringing the sad news of the engagement on Camas Prairie between the Nez Perce Indians and Captain (Brevet Colonel) Perry's troop of cavalry, in which one half of Perry's troops were killed. The news caused a great deal of excitement. Word also came that the citizens of Lewiston were in danger of a raid by the Indians and that the settlers were pouring into town from all sides and help was much needed.

"Thos. P. Page, county auditor of Walla Walla County, started to work raising a volunteer company. At one-o'clock in the afternoon a meeting was called at the Court House, where the facts were presented and resolutions were passed promising to go to the aid of the people of the Lewiston district.

One hundred names were soon down on the roll and all who could get horses were to start that night. The quartermaster at the fort gave us rifles and six rounds of cartridges apiece. At six o'clock that evening the following party left Walla Walla enroute to Lewiston:

Thos. P. Page, Captain	Albert Hall	Alex O'Dell
L. K. Grimm, First Lieut.	Jake Holbrook	E. S. Robinson
John F. McLean, Sergeant	Frank Jackson	J. S. Scott
A. Reeves Ayers	John Keeney	Ben. Scott
John Agu	J. H. Lister	Albert Small
Ike Abbott	Henry Lacy	Frank Johnson
A. L. Bird	Wm. McKean	Frank Waldrip
Chas. Blewitt	S. H. Maxon	Thomas Bell
H. E. Holmes	Lane Gilliam	

"We arrived at Dayton at one o'clock that night and put our horses in the livery stable and ourselves to sleep in the hay-mow overhead. Next morning we breakfasted at the hotel. A. R. Ayres, H. E. Holmes and Tom Bell were missing. We travelled on to Maringo where a short stop was made and the troops under Col. Whipple came up. We volunteers took the Indian trail across the hills, the regulars followed the wagon road. We stopped two hours on the Pataha and then travelled on to Don Favon's ranch, which was about fifteen miles this side of Lewiston. Here we waited about three hours for supper, there being some misunderstanding about it. The troops camped at the same place.

"On the morning of the 21st, after paying our bills, we travelled on to Lewiston. Leaving our horses on this side of the river we crossed over to the town where we met Major Spurgeon, the commander of that place, who gave us to understand that the settlers nearby were in no immediate danger and that, if we cared to go on into the Indian country, we could be of good service, but would have to be under the command of the military authorities. We re-crossed the river to our horses, got dinner and signed our names to report to General Howard for eight day's service. We then elected our officers as follows: T. P. Page, Captain, L. K. Grimm, Lieutenant and John F. McLean, Sergeant. We again crossed over to Lewiston, this time with our outfits, and were regularly mustered in for eight day's of service. Up to this time Ayres, Holmes and Bell had not caught up with us. Some thought that they had backed out and gone home, others that they would come up yet.

"Major Spurgeon directed us to Fort Lapwai to report to General Howard, where we arrived at six o'clock in the evening. Here we had supper and, after drawing on the post commissary for rations, retired. It rained on us all that night. The morning of the 22nd we spent in repairing and fixing up our outfits. At one o'clock we were again on the march as General Howard's guard, the troops going in advance. There were three companies of infantry, two of cavalry, one company of artillery and our little company of volunteers.

"As we were starting off from camp we were surprised as well as pleased to see Doc. Ayres, Doc. Holmes and Ike Abbott coming up. They were forgiven on our learning that they had got lost, being led astray by Bell, whose horse gave out, and then he went back home. They joined us in the march without waiting to secure any dinner. While we were going up Craig Mountain, Ike Abbott's horse got away from him and he did not catch him for several hours. On the evening of the 22nd, we made camp on the Craig Mountain, putting our horses out with those belonging to the troops and Sergeant McLean detailed J. H. Lister, Frank Waldrip and myself on guard the first part of the night and Lane Gilliam, A. L. Bird and Frank Jackson for the latter part. This was our first guard duty. I thought that night that upon me rested the entire burden of herding those three hundred head of horses.

"On Saturday, June 23rd, we started early and travelled along the mountain until after noon, when we reached the great Camas prairie. We passed the place where our former citizen, Lew Day was first attacked by the Indians, and we later came to Ben Norton's place on the cottonwood, where we camped. Owing to the fact that we were in advance of the command, Captain Page put a guard on the house and barn. I was very much surprised to see the extent and richness of the prairie. I am told that

timothy hay will grow anywhere on the prairie. Captain Page had placed Henry Lacy as guard over the barns and, after the command came up, Captain Wilkinson started to enter the barn and Henry stopped him. The Captain told Henry who he was, still it did not do any good and the Captain turned and went off. Henry and Charley Blewitt were the youngest members in the Company.

On Sunday morning, June 24th, Aleck O'Dell, Lane Gilliam, Al Hull, Jake Holbrook, Ben Scott, Ike Abbott, Wm. McKean and myself got up early and started for Mount Idaho, nineteen miles distant. We passed the place where Norton and his family, Joe Moore and Miss Bowers were overtaken by the Indians, who wounded various members of the party and killed their horses. We also saw the place where the load of goods for Mount Idaho had been captured by the Indians. We passed through Grangeville and on to Mount Idaho, where we arrived about twelve o'clock. We hitched our horses to the fence of a man by the name of Aram and he gave them some hay. Mr. Brown of the hotel told us that dinner would be at four o'clock. We told him we were hungry and couldn't wait. He wasn't long in getting us something to eat.

"During our stay here, O'Dell and one or two others had their horses shod. I went to Volmer's store and wrote a letter home. Mr. Scott, the manager of the store, showed us many courtesies. He and Mr. Volmer were formerly from Walla Walla. Mr. Scott said that all who could were preparing to leave for Salmon River. Mr. Aram invited us all into dinner, which invitation we gladly accepted. Here we received the following information in regard to the depredations of the Indians. Joseph's band from the Wallowa and the Salmon River Indians, under White Bird, had been camped on Rocky Canyon, eight miles from Mount Idaho. The Indians attacked on Thursday, June 14th. Jack Manual was living there with his wife and baby. The baby was killed and Mrs. Manual, after being horribly mistreated, was locked up in a room of their house and then the house was burned to the ground. James Baker, who lived one mile below Manual's place on White Bird was killed. Samuel Benedict was killed but his wife and little girl came into town safely. H. C. Brown was shot in the shoulder and escaped in a boat and was later found by the cavalry. Harry Mason was killed but his sister escaped in the brush. Wm. Osborne was killed on Salmon River. Those killed on John Day's Creek were Henry Elfreys and his nephew, Robert Bland, Dick Divine and two Frenchmen. The Elfreys were killed by the Indians with their own guns, which they had secured while the settlers were at work in the field.

"The settlers on Camas prairie shared a similar fate. According to Mr. Scott, Lew Day left Mount Idaho to place the settlers on the prairie on guard and give notice to the troops at Lapwai. The Indians overtook Day two miles from Norton's house. They immediately fired on him hitting him twice in the back. Lew turned and went back to Norton's place and found Norton and his wife and boy. Joe Moore, Miss Bowers, Mr. and Mrs. Chamberlain and their child, and Lew Day all got into the wagon and started for town, the Indians following and firing on them. Four miles the other side of Grangeville the parties all got out of the wagon and Hill Norton and Miss Bowers made their escape and came into Grangeville, bringing the first news of the slaughter. The team of horses had been shot when they got out of the wagon. Morton was killed, Joe Moore had been hit twice. Mrs. Norton had been shot through both legs. The Chamberlains and their child were killed, the child's head being split open with a hatchet. Mrs. Chamberlain was shot in the breast with an arrow. Theodore Swartz was wounded.

"We started to camp at six o'clock that evening and arrived at nine. On Monday, June 25th, we left our camp on the Cottonwood and continued our march to Johnson's camp or ranch, where we camped. On the road we passed the place where about one hundred lodges of Indians had been encamped at the lakes, on the rocks, in the canyons and on the prairie, before the outbreak. Over the ground of Col. Perry's retreat, Captain Page picked up some twenty cartridge shells within a distance of fifty yards. At Johnson's we were given a camping ground to the right of the main column, about half a mile from wood and water. The boys were dissatisfied and we got permission to camp within the inclosure at Johnson's house. H. E. Holmes, Ike Abbott and C. S. Robinson were put on guard.

"After breakfast on Tuesday morning we left camp to reconnoiter. We were in advance of the command that day. In our reconnoitering we came across a dead soldier about two miles from camp.

Here we rested to give the infantry time to come up. We reached the summit looking down on White Bird Canyon about twelve o'clock. During this morning's ride most of the soldiers killed in Col. Perry's fight with the Indians were buried. For several miles we kept coming upon dead bodies.

In the afternoon, with Chapman as guide, we rode along the top of the divide between Salmon River and White Bird. It was rough and tiresome riding. We saw fresh tracks and Chapman told us we were liable to meet Indians anywhere. Presently we discovered three Indian spies across the river, and, soon after we saw the whole band moving further up the mountain. We fired a number of shots toward them but they were too far away and we were only wasting our cartridges.

"Next we left the ridge and went down to the bottom at Manual's on White Bird. We went inside the gate and looked at the ruins of the fire. A few of the soldiers strayed down to the creek and what was their surprise to see, sitting in a little shed which the Indians had spared, a white man whom we all soon found to be Jack Manual, whom we had reported as among the killed. He had been wounded in the back of the neck with an arrow and had also been shot in the hips. Our next task was to get him out and away to safety. We soon fixed a pole in a broken buggy that was standing near and by fastening what spare ropes we had to the buggy and to the pommels of our saddles, we succeeded in getting him away. Finding we were not making headway fast enough, our Captain sent to Captain Miller for two pack mules which we soon had. Then, making the pole into shafts, we soon got to camp, where we turned Mr. Manual over to his friends, who were to take him to Mount Idaho the next day. It had rained all day and we had had a hard day's work.

"On June 27th we broke camp and marched to White Bird, the soldiers burying those they had not had time to bury the previous day. It was here on the White Bird side of the divide that the terrible battle had taken place. That night we were within a short distance of the Salmon River, which we intended to cross the following day to fight the Indians on the other side. We could see them for hours that afternoon riding their horses and swinging from side to side in all kinds of capers. After making camp, we got instructions to escort the pack train back to Lewiston, where they were going for supplies. On reaching Lewiston, the eight days for which we had enlisted were up and, believing that the army of General Howard was fully able to meet and conquer Chief Joseph and his bands, we returned to our homes.

Almost the day after our return came word of the ambushing of Lieutenant Rains and a dozen volunteers, of the regulars, and the killing of Blewitt and Foster. The troops had known that the Indians were in the vicinity and the Lieutenant called for volunteers to go out and hunt for Blewitt and Foster, who had gone out earlier in the day and had failed to return as they had been ordered to do. The Lieut. and his volunteers had not been gone long before a volley was heard and, on tracing them up, they found that they had all been killed from ambush at the one volley. Foster had been killed earlier near the road at the entrance of the prairie. Blewitt had been killed a little later further around the mountain, undoubtedly after a run for his life."

* * * * *

W. S. Clark

General O.O. Howard's report, continued:

"Friday, June 22nd, having assembled at Lapwai, Whipple's (L) and Winter's (E) companies of Cavalry, that had marched over 200 miles in six days, Pollock's (D), Eltonhead's (I), Miles' (E), Jocelyn's (B), Haughey's (H) companies of Twenty first Infantry, and Miller's (E). Fourth Artillery, armed as Infantry, making an effective force for the field of 227 men. I deemed it best to take the field at once in person, so as to operate carefully till the remainder of my troops could be concentrated and brought up.

From the direction the Indians were taking, and from information. I saw the necessity of interposing some force between the renegade Nez Perces and the Weiser Indians. This was done by organizing a force at Boise City under Major Green, 1st Cavalry, and moving it to the Weiser River. He

was to draw his forces from Boise and Harney and looked to General McDowell for reinforcement from the military division. Bendire's Company (K), First Cavalry was sent direct to Camp Harney to the Weiser country and was in position on the 29th of June, in season to effect the object desired. The other troops of which I shall hereafter speak, three companies of cavalry and three of infantry, were more slowly brought together from great distances, so that Green did not commence his northward march from Boise until the 10th of July. My immediate command arrives at Norton's ranch, 43 miles, the 23rd of June. The 24th I send Trimble's small company to reinforce a few citizen families that were protecting themselves on State Creek by a temporary barricade. I hoped that this post at State Creek would check the Indians in that direction, serve to occupy their attention, preventing further outrages there and beyond, while I was moving on them more directly.

The 25th I moved my command by two routes to Johnson's ranch, some 4 miles from the head of White Bird Canyon. The 26th with my whole force I make a reconnaissance into the canyon and beyond Captain Perry's battlefield.

Captain Page, with some twenty volunteers from Walla Walla (Washington Territorial Militia) ***** that had joined me at Lapwai, moved along the crest of the mountain-ridge on the right of White Bird Canyon, till he came in sight of the country beyond the Salmon. He discovered and reported the enemy in force. After burying the dead found on the battlefield (Perry's) and in the ravines leading to the rear, we returned to camp.

June 27th and 28th marched to the crossing of the Salmon, about a mile and a half above the mouth of White Bird. The second force, Throckmorton's M, Rodney's D, Bancroft's A, and Morris' G companies of 4th Artillery, and Burton's C company of 21st Infantry, collected at Lapwai, here joined the advance, making in all an effective force of 400 men. In the afternoon Indians charged to the River, a brief skirmish ensued, after which they left the valley for the heights beyond.

The 29th, Lieutenant Miller, First Cavalry, is sent with trains to Lapwai for supplies, and is escorted by Captain Perry's command and Page's volunteer militia returning home. The Salmon River is at this time high and the current very swift, so that it takes all day of July 1st to cross the command. Captain Trimble gets over opposite his position at State Creek. The evening of the 29th, positive information is obtained that Looking Glass, who, with his people, had stood aloof from the hostilities, had been furnishing reinforcements to them of at least twenty warriors, and that he proposed to join them in person with all his people, the first available opportunity.

His grounds for cultivation lay near the mouth of the south fork of the Clearwater, supposed to be about 40 miles from our present position. With a view of preventing the completion of this treachery, I sent Captain Whipple, commanding his own and Winter's companies, and the Gatling guns, with instructions to make a forced march, surprise and capture the Chief and all that belonged to him.

Captain Whipple made the march, finding it at least 10 miles longer than anticipated, and did not make the attack until next morning. With a short parley and a brisk skirmish the Indians escaped. Between six and seven hundred ponies were captured and the Indian lodges destroyed. The loss of the ponies and the attack unfortunately had the effect to give prompt reinforcement to those who were fighting and caused me some disappointment.

Whipple's command the evening of the 1st of July reached Grangeville, where he received an order from me to march to Norton's Ranch, on the Cottonwood, where Captain Perry's company, returning with supplies, was to join him the 3rd.

The object of this movement was to meet the enemy and hold him in check should he anywhere attempt to recross the Salmon and turn upon my communications, which he probably would do as soon as I crossed and pursued him, since the report of Bendire's position kept him from going south, while my troops and those at State Creek hindered a return on the front and left.

The 2nd of July we ascended the mountains after forming junction with Captain Trimble's command, now consisting of his own company and McConville's twenty volunteers.

Another small company of mounted volunteers had joined me from the vicinity of Dayton W. T. Washington Territorial Militia). The ascent was by a blind trail, exceedingly steep and difficult, and rendering a march of not more than ten miles equivalent to three times as much on an ordinary road.

A heavy rain followed by thick clouds so impeded the command that several pack mules were killed by rolling down the mountains, and the greater part of two days spent in making the descent. Several caches of Indian supplies were found about half way up and destroyed. Abundant Indian trails showed which way the enemy had gone, viz, to our right. The first destination, whether by canoe encampment to Snake country, or to one of the lower crossings of the Salmon, is yet uncertain. Besides finishing the march of the 3rd of July, a reconnaissance is made by Lieut. Fletcher, my aide-de-camp, for ten miles.

The 4th we reached the vicinity of Rocky Canyon. Here news is brought me that the enemy, probably part of his force joining Looking Glass, had recrossed the Salmon and turned back, crossing my communications beyond Norton's; that Captain Whipple had sent Lieutenant Rains and ten men in advance of his own reconnaissance on the 3rd; that Rains, with ten brave men, had been ambushed and all killed; that there was also fighting on this day when the couriers left.

I sent Hunter's and McConville's volunteers immediately by the way of Rocky Canyon to reinforce Whipple's, now Perry's command; the latter having reached Cottonwood one day later than expected.

Captain Whipple had made a prompt and gallant movement toward Lapwai, succeeded in bringing in the supplies with Perry's escort in safety, though surrounded by 300 Indians. It was the next day after the arrival of Captain Perry that 17 citizens (Volunteer Militia), having started on their own accord from Mount Idaho to re-enforce the cavalry, were attacked by the Indians enroute, losing their Captain and several men killed and wounded, not far from Norton's. Complaint was made that our troops were slow getting to their rescue. Captain Perry, whose gallantry at the White Bird battle is undenied, has demanded a court of inquiry. I shall receive the official reports and the investigation of the court, and will forward them as the best record and judgment. I may say, however, that reasonable caution under the circumstances, in the presence of a superior force of the enemy, was to be expected.

The reason I did not cross my whole force immediately at Rocky Canyon was that I believed from reports that the enemy was making only a raid, and that his main camp, with women, children and plunder, was yet on or near the Snake River. Therefore, I deemed it best, with my foot-men and Trimble's company, to pursue his main trail.

The 5th of July brought us to Craig's Ferry, where it became evident that all the Indians had passed back and taken the trail toward the Cottonwood, 16 miles distant. At first I had hoped by a prompt crossing to join Perry and throw my whole force upon the enemy before he could reach the Clearwater or pass my front to Wallowa, if such were his intention; but having no boats, a raft had been constructed from the timber of a cabin near the ferry.

Our first attempt the morning of the 6th to cross the river, here a perfect torrent, lost our raft, which tumbled down the rapids at a swift rate, with all on board, for three or four miles.

About this time by Indian couriers, I ascertained that the enemy had already passed from the Cottonwood to the Clearwater, so that my shortest line was to turn back via White Bird Canyon. That evening we again ascended the mountain, making six miles by dark.

The evening of the 8th my head of column had reached Grangeville. Here McConville, who after a visit to Norton's had escorted the wounded volunteers to Mount Idaho, had reorganized by forming a battalion consisting of his own, Hunter's and Mount Idaho companies (all Militia). He proposed to me in writing to make a reconnaissance in force toward Kamiah, and now made his report.

He said: "We occupy a strong position six miles from Kamiah, on a hill, where we can see the enemy near the Clearwater, three or four miles further from Kamiah".

I resolved upon this information to take Whipple's route to Looking Glass's camp via Jackson's bridge, with the hope of taking the enemy in reverse.

About twenty volunteers were sent directly to McConville, and he was urged to hold steadily where he was until I could get into position. This he did until the 11th of July, when the volunteers left their positions and went to Mount Idaho.

The 9th of July (the cavalry from Norton's having joined us the night before) I proceeded four miles beyond Jackson's bridge, and here waited one day for the infantry and artillery, a portion of which was still enroute from the Salmon. Several companies of Miller's and Mile's battalions made a march from the evening of the 9th to the evening of the 10th of 38 miles, without halt, being assisted in part by a few wagons, and rejoined me.

The next day, the 11th, we marched from this camp at 7 A. M., following the ridge between the forks of the Clearwater.

About 12 o'clock, my aid-de-camp, Lieutenant Fletcher, discovers the enemy in a deep ravine near mouth of Cottonwood Creek.

Numbers of horses and a few Indians are seen. I sent Captain Trimble's company accompanied by my aid-de-camp, to watch the front and right, while I ride to the bluff at the left, and saw plainly the hostiles, who judging from their motions, had just discovered our approach.

By one o'clock a howitzer, maneuvered by Lieutenant Otis, Fourth Artillery, and two Gatling guns were firing toward the masses of Indians below. They were running their horses up the South Fork on both banks near the river, and driving their stock as far as possible beyond our range. In ten minutes it was impossible to reach them longer, owing to the craggy mountain shores back of and close to the river border. My guide, Mr. Chapman, assures me that they can escape only by a canyon on my left, which makes a small angle with the river and leads inwards my rear.

The next bluff in that direction was beyond a deep and rocky transverse ravine perpendicular to this canyon, I instantly ordered my howitzer battery and Gatling guns, supported by Winter's cavalry, to go thither with full speed.

Around the head of the ravine our distance was over a mile, the enemy having less than a third to go, so we found them dismounted and in position already on our approach, beyond the second bluff, while some thirty or forty mounted Indians galloped just beyond range to compass my left. For a few minutes I feared the result of this attempt, when just in time, Major Mason, Twenty-first Infantry, department Inspector General, appeared close by with Burton's company of infantry, having anticipated my order (at every juncture Major Mason thus has supplemented my efforts). This company deploying on the right enabled Winters to take care of the left. Firing now become brisk. My line was extended to the left by the cavalry and to the right by the infantry and artillery battalions, gradually refusing my flanks until the whole was enveloped. Four hundred men held a line of two and a half miles in extent. My main pack train had passed by this position. A small train with a few supplies was on the road nearer us.

The Indian flankers by their rapid movement struck the rear of the small train, killed two of the packers, and disabled a couple of mules loaded with howitzer ammunition. The prompt fire from Perry's and Whipple's cavalry saved the ammunition from capture. I had previously sent an orderly to conduct the trains within my lines; the fierce onset of the Indians requiring greater haste, Lieut. Wilkinson, aid-de-camp, being sent, brought in the trains under cover of Rodney's artillery and Trimble's cavalry companies.

The enemy manifests extraordinary boldness, planting sharpshooters at available points, making charges on foot and horseback with all manner of savage demonstrations. These attempts are successfully resisted at every part of the line. At 3:30 P. M., a spirited counter-charge is made on the right, down into the ravine, by Companies H (Haughey's), D (Pollock's), E (Mile's), and B (Jocelyn's), Twenty-first Infantry; A and part of E, Fourth Artillery, participating. Captain Miles, commanding the infantry battalion, supported by Captain Miller's artillery battalion led in this charge. Captain Bancroft, Fourth Artillery, and Lieutenant Williams, Twenty-first Infantry, were wounded about this time. A number of Indians were killed and several wounded in this charge, and the ravine cleared.

Captain Miller a little later led a second charge near the center, Burton, Haughey, Elsonhead, and Winters with their companies participating. Lieutenant Wilkinson, aid-de-camp, by my direction, meanwhile led a demonstration on the right, using artillery and infantry and every available man from cavalry, horse-holders, orderlies, extra-duty men, and train. Lieutenant Fletcher, acting aid-de-camp, also using a howitzer at this and at several other times during the battle, did effective service by lodging shells within the enemy's barricade.

Miller's charge gained the ridge in front and secured the disputed ravine near Winter's left. Further spasmodic charges on the left by the enemy were repelled by Perry's and Whipple's cavalry, dismounted, and Morris' artillery, Company G. Yet a few Indian sharpshooters managed to so annoy every man who approached the spring, our water supply, that in spite of our successful charges, matters were not very bright at dark. During the night stone barricades and rifle pits were constructed by ourselves and the enemy. At daylight the 12th, every available man was on the line. I directed that food should be cooked and coffee made at the center and front, but we had first to get complete possession of our spring, as sufficient water was not secured in the night. This was executed by Captains Miller and Perry, using Lieutenant Otis' battery supported by Rodney's company. The sharpshooters were driven from their hiding places and the spring secured against re-capture. As soon as every man had been provided with food, I directed the Artillery battalion be withdrawn entirely from the lines, thin though they were already, and the lines be held by the infantry and artillery battalions. It may be remembered that the number of Indian warriors and the number of men I could put on the line were about equal, owing to the fact that with us a large number are necessarily absorbed in holding the horses and in performing extra duty.

Captain Miller withdrew his battalion about 2:30 P. M. (the time I had selected), and was preparing to execute his movement, viz, to push out by the left flank, piercing the enemy's line just left of center, cross his barricaded ravine, then face suddenly to the right and charge, striking the Indian position in reverse, assisting himself by howitzer.

As he was about to move, a dust appeared in the distance beyond the Indian's position. Our glasses revealed it as an unexpected supply train, escorted by Capt. Jackson's Company B, of the First Cavalry. Immediately the artillery battalion is sent to meet the new comers. With a little skirmishing and delay of an hour, the train was brought in, in safety.

Major Keeler, of General McDowell's staff, accompanies the escort and brings us cheering words from his general. His subsequent generous aid will not be forgotten.

Then at once Captain Miller, instead of returning to our position with the train is marching slowly in column by the right flank towards us; when just at the right point he faces quickly to the left, moves steadily for nearly a mile across our front, and charges the enemy's position. The usual attempt to double his left is made by the Indians, when a reserved company (Rodney's) in Miller's rear deploys and flanks the flankers. For a few minutes there is stubborn resistance at the enemy's barricades. Then the whole line gives way. Immediately the pursuit is taken up by the infantry and artillery and Winter's cavalry company, dismounted, and the remaining cavalry as soon as they can saddle and mount. Capt. Jackson's company, just arrived, followed the Gatling gun in support at a trot as far as the bluff overlooking the river. The howitzers are brought to the same point with Trimble's company and shot and shell poured into the retreating masses of Indians and ponies.

They are closely pursued through the ravines into the deep canyon, thence to the river, over rocks, down precipices, and along trails almost too steep and craggy to traverse. The footmen pursued them to the river opposite the Indian camp. The river being too deep and rapid for the men to ford, they here waited for the cavalry under Captain Perry.

The cavalry worked its way as rapidly as it could from its position on the left down the rugged mountain steps to the deep ford, and crossed slowly into the Indian camp, and was strongly posted beyond it while the Gatling guns and howitzers, near which I was observing, were doing their best to reach the Indians, who were fleeing in every direction up the heights to the left of Cottonwood Creek and beyond the Clearwater.

At this time (about 5 P. M.), I was following up the movement, descending a steep trail, when about half way down the mountain side I discovered a number of warriors apparently returning toward their camp from the Cottonwood ravine, at least 3 miles from us. I warned Captain Perry, and directed him to immediately carry over the foot-men with his horses.

While doing this, time was consumed, and the Indians had turned eastward, crossed the Cottonwood Canyon, and under cover of a transverse ravine got well in advance of us, so that I concluded to postpone further pursuit until the next morning.

The Indian camp abandoned in haste had their lodges still standing filled with their effects, blankets, buffalo robes, cooking utensils (food cooking on the fire), flour, jerked beef, and plunder of all descriptions. The wounded and dead horses showed that our artillery had reached their camp. I reported at the time fifteen Indians killed and a large number wounded.

After that, 8 dead were found on the trail, of those who died from mortal wounds, making for this battle 23 warriors killed; and there were at least twice that many wounded. Twenty-three prisoners, warriors, and 17 women and children were subsequently secured in pursuit. Our loss was 2 officers and 22 enlisted men wounded and 13 killed.

I have denominated this battle of the 11th and 12th July as the "BATTLE OF THE SOUTH FORK OF THE CLEARWATER". The Nez Perces fought with skill and the utmost obstinacy. Their numbers were about 300 warriors, aided by their women, who formed for them a substantial reserve. My force engaged amounted, in effectives, to 400. The conduct of our troops, officers and men, during this battle, could not have been better. No man was seen to leave his post of duty from alarm, and the movements were spirited and confident throughout.

The 13th, as soon as the battery could be brought down from the trail where it was obstructed and left at dark the night before, the pursuit was resumed by all the troops, except Winter's company, which was to finish burying the dead and escort the wounded to Grangeville. As soon as we reach the heights above Kamiah, we see that the enemy's families, their stock and effects, are mostly across the Clearwater, about a mile above the ferry. We press down the trail as rapidly as possible, and move the advance in two columns at a trot to the place of the crossing, Captain Jackson's leading on the left road, and the rest of the cavalry on the right. When Jackson reached the river, the last warrior had gotten over and well up the other bank.

The Gatling guns and musketry were used profusely from our side, but with little apparent effect, except to increase the rapidity of the enemy's retreat. As Perry's and Whipple's cavalry were passing a high bluff, which was beyond the river, a brisk fire was opened by the enemy for a few minutes, throwing this cavalry into considerable confusion for a time, but without loss. We learned that the enemy had intended from behind barricades and natural cover to meet us near the river, but our resolute and rapid approach, after their defeat the day before, they could not withstand; so they jumped upon their skin rafts, already overloaded, and swam over, occasioning the loss of many of the supplies which their women had saved and brought off from their camp the day before. One enlisted man, only, was slightly wounded in the skirmish at the river.

The 14th was spent in reconnoitering. The 15th I started a column of cavalry with intention of ascending the heights to the rear, as if enroute to Lapwai, to move 20 miles down the Clearwater to Dunnwell's Ferry, and crossing there, to attempt to gain the trail to the rear of the Indians, as they were encamping in plain sight, not more than four miles from Kamiah. I had not proceeded more than 6 miles before the Indians began their retreat in good earnest along the Lo Lo Trail. Therefore, leaving Captain Jackson with his company and a few volunteers who had just returned to me, to watch Dunnwell's Ferry, I returned to Kamiah and prepared at once to move my entire command over the river.

My own return was hastened by a request, said to be sent in from Joseph, asking on what terms he could surrender. While I was talking with his messenger, not far from the river, a shot was fired from the enemy upon our picket nearby. The messenger himself and family and some others subsequently surrendered, but not Joseph.

It was doubtless a ruse to delay our movements, but it did not affect them.

The 17th I sent Major Mason, of my staff, in command of the cavalry, Indian Scouts, and McConville's volunteers, to pursue the hostiles for two marches. The trail is exceedingly difficult, and passes mostly over wooded mountains, the woods being filled with fallen timber. This enables the Indians to form ambuscades with ease. Major Mason followed the enemy to within 3 miles of Oro Fino Creek; his scouts ran into the enemy's rear guard. Three of them were disarmed, and 1 wounded and 1 killed. One of the enemy was killed and two pack animals captured. Having accomplished, as he believed, the object of his movement, and finding the trail unfit for action with cavalry, where a small rear guard could easily throw them into confusion, he concluded it wise to return, so that, at 8 A. M., the 18th, the pursuing column returned to Kamiah. This really ended the campaign within the limits of my Department.

I count some of the results as follows:

First. From Perry's battle, 17 June, all murders of citizens by the Indians immediately cease, their attention being fully occupied by the troops.

Second. The hostiles are kept in constant motion. They are prevented from going southward; forced from the country between the Salmon and the Snake; their treacherous allies under Looking Glass defeated, and lodges destroyed, and 600 ponies captured.

Third. They are anticipated in their plans at Cottonwood, met by troops at every point, and finally, by our forced marching on inner lines, brought to battle and defeated with loss.

Fourth. They are then immediately pursued, and faintly attempt to make a stand at Kamiah, on our side of the river, but again are driven, with loss of provisions and morale.

Fifth. They are then pressed beyond the river along the Lo Lo Trail, their fighting force having been reduced at least one-third, till it is certain that the main body of the murderous hostiles have departed for the "buffalo country" and the Department of the Columbia freed from their presence.

This completes the first period of the campaign against the hostile Nez Perces.

CAMPAIGN WITHOUT THE DEPARTMENT

My first plan, which I commenced the morning of July 19 to execute, was to leave a small garrison at Kamiah, proceed with my fighting force by the way of Mullan Road to Missoula, Montana, picking up twenty-days supplies at Lewiston, enroute. I believed that Major Green with his Boise force would arrive within a week, and sufficiently guard Camas Prairie and neighboring country against any small scouting parties that the hostiles might have left behind, and I knew, further, that Colonel Wheaton's regiment (Second Infantry) would reach Lewiston in season to keep everything quiet to the north and west among the discontented renegades of other tribes. I was half way to Cold Springs with the cavalry -artillery and infantry already there - when messages came to me from Colonel Watkins and Mr. Montieth, the Indian Inspector and agent, that the Indians were burning houses along the north fork of the Clearwater; and from Captain Throckmorton, commanding at Kamiah, that they were threatening his position; a little later from James Sawyer, head chief of the Kamiahs, that several hundred of his people's ponies had been stolen.

I now know that the alarm was occasioned by a small observing party that had followed our cavalry on its return from the Lo Lo Trail, and that the only mischief done by them was the stealing of some of the Kamiah Indian's horses. But at the time, the excitement was too real to admit of my leaving the vicinity, till Green or Wheaton should arrive. I moved my command to Croesdale's farm on Camas Prairie, a point about equidistant from Norton's at the Cottonwood, from Rocky Canyon on the Salmon, from Mount Idaho, and from the forks of the Clearwater, and only 16 miles from Kamiah. Here I awaited gathering in my supplies.

Having modified my plan, I embodied it in General Field Orders No. 3, as follows:

HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF THE COLUMBIA, IN THE FIELD
Camp A. Sully, Idaho Territory, July 23, 1877
GENERAL FIELD ORDERS NO. 3

I. The hostile Indians, according to the latest information, having retreated via the Lo Lo Trail toward Montana Territory, leaving but a few families, supposedly concealed in the rocky fastnesses of the Snake and Salmon Rivers country, it is directed -

That two columns and a reserve shall operate as follows:

A. The right column, personally commanded by the department commander, consisting of the battalion of artillery under command of Captain Marcus P. Miller, Fourth Artillery, the battalion of Infantry commanded by Captain Evan Miles, Twenty-first Infantry, and a battalion of Cavalry (four companies) under command of Major George B. Sanford, First Cavalry, will immediately upon the arrival of Major Green's forces from Boise, enter upon direct pursuit of the Indians over the Lo Lo Trail. Objective point, Missoula City, Montana.

B. The left column, commanded by Colonel Frank Wheaton, Second Infantry, consisting of his force of infantry, increased by a battalion of cavalry to be commanded by Colonel Cuvier Grover, First Cavalry, and composed as follows, viz:

Companies F (Perry's) and H (Trimble's), First Cavalry, and two companies (200) of Washington Territory Mounted Volunteers, will proceed northward by way of Hangman's Creek and Coeur d'Alene Mission. Objective point, Missoula City, Montana. The design of the column will be:

1. A cooperation with the right column; frequent communications to be kept up by means of reliable couriers via the reserve column near Mount Idaho.

2. By overawing malcontent Indians, or occupying their attention to prevent any re-inforcements of the hostile Indians, and should the latter attempt to return through the Coeur d'Alene country, to engage them.

3. To quiet the fears and apprehensions of the settlers, that they may return to their peaceful pursuits.

4. A cordial cooperation with the officials of the Interior Department in their endeavor to settle disputes and controversies between so-called friendly Indians and settlers.

Colonel Wheaton will, as soon as practicable, furnish the commanding officer of Lapwai, Idaho, with a small detachment of ten or fifteen men, and will leave a guard at Lewiston sufficient to protect the main depot.

Finally, recent indications of a reconcentration of fugitive hostile Indians on the Lo Lo Trail having altered the department commander's original intention of pursuing the northern route in person, he desires that the commander of the left column exercise the greatest caution in the anticipation and prevention of complications tending to cause an increase in allies, either direct or indirect, to those Indians now actually at war.

C. The reserve column will be commanded by Major John Green, First Cavalry, and will consist of the troops from Boise, excepting the cavalry designated to accompany the right column, increased by L Company (Whipple's) and E Company (Winter's), First Cavalry, and a body of Warm Springs Indian Scouts.

Major Green will locate his main force at or near Croesdale's farm, Cottonwood Creek, protecting with at least one company and two pieces of artillery the sub-depot of Kamiah, and maintaining a small outpost at Mount Idaho as a nucleus for the Mount Idaho and Grangeville Volunteer Militia. He will closely watch, by means of scouting parties and patrols, the crossings of the south fork of the Clearwater River and Salmon River, e.g., the forks, Kamiah, Dunnwell's Ferry, etc, on the former, and White Bird Canyon, etc, on the latter. The country between the Salmon and Snake Rivers and

beyond the forks of the south fork of the Clearwater River, will be thoroughly and constantly scoured by scouting parties, its most hidden recesses probed by the Warm Springs Indians, and any scouts, little parties, or hiding families left by the hostile Indians, be captured and brought in. Major Green will forward promptly communications between the operating columns.

II. The right column will move well across the south fork of the Clearwater River, so as to be ready to take its departure from the Wey-ipe Monday, the 30th instant. Colonel Wheaton will endeavor to make the movement of the left column northward as nearly simultaneous with the movement of the right column as possible. It is desirable that any necessary delay in the left column take place as far northward (near the Coeur d'Alene country) as possible.

Each column will be supplied with 20 day's small rations, and will take with them a herd of as many steers as necessary. As a general rule forage will not be carried, but will be obtained enroute.

III. The Lewiston Depot is designated as the main depot for the army in the field. The general staff will keep it furnished with at least three month's supplies in advance.

BY COMMAND OF BRIGADIER GENERAL HOWARD:

R. H. FLETCHER

First Lieutenant, Twenty First Infantry, Acting Asst. Adj. Gen.

In execution of this order my movement commences Thursday, the 26th of July, the first march being to Kamiah.

The 28th, with McConville's eighteen volunteer militia, while the right column is assembling and crossing the river, I make a personal reconnaissance to the Little Camas Prairie, 11 miles distant, and find no signs of the families of the hostile Indians suspected to be there. After this reconnaissance, the volunteers return home. During my absence Major Sanford, First Cavalry, arrives at Kamiah, with Bendire's (K), Carr's (I) and Wagner's (C) companies (This is the first appearance of Major Green's troops). The 29th of July is spent in crossing the cavalry and supplies and completing the preparations for the movement over the Lo Lo Trail.

The 30th (Monday), the march beyond the Clearwater commenced. A heavy and continuous rain renders the mountainous trail slippery and exceedingly difficult. The trail runs for the most part through pine forests, with thick underbrush and fallen timber. There are occasional openings. At the Camas Prairie (the Wey-ipe) there is grazing and good water. Here we encamp, having made 16 miles.

During August 1st, 2nd, 3rd and 4th our way is made through a rough wilderness, for the most part along what is called a "divide", or narrow and winding crest, where we find scarcely grass enough to keep our animals alive. During the 4th, I am met by two messengers that I had sent ten days before from my camp at Croesdale's farm to Missoula. They bear me a message from Captain Rawn, Seventh Infantry, saying that the Indians had been permitted to pass through the Lo Lo Canyon, and were moving slowly up the Bitter Root Valley, and that Colonel Gibbon was expected at Missoula immediately. This dispatch determines me to divide my command with the hope of forming junction with Gibbons, earlier than I could with the whole.

August 5th, I march the cavalry 21 miles, camping after dark at another fork of the Clearwater, where there is not a particle of food for the animals.

Before breakfasting the 6th, the command moves at dawn till grass is reached at Summit Prairie. After grazing for a few hours, we push on to Hot Springs, where we met a messenger from Colonel Gibbon himself. He had left Missoula the 4th and was in pursuit of the hostiles. He wishes, if possible, I get to him a hundred cavalry. The same night I dispatch two couriers to let Colonel Gibbon know that I am making the longest possible marches with my cavalry, and will press it in person, bringing him two hundred instead of one.

The 7th from Hot Springs, I send an aid-de-camp ahead to Missoula, to secure forage and other supplies, and have them meet us at the mouth of Lo Lo Fork of the Bitter Root, so that there shall be no delay in the march. This day the trail is found to be even more trying to the animals than before, but we came at the end of 22 miles out of the timber and mountain trail into excellent grazing.

August 8th, leaving camp at dawn, we soon reach Captain Rawn's fortifications now vacant, in the Lo Lo Canyon, and are shown by a citizen where the Indians ascended the heights on his right and passed his flank without hindrance. He had about 25 regular troops, with about two hundred volunteers.

It seems that the Indians really negotiated their way by promising the citizens that they would do them no harm if permitted to pass by unmolested. Captain Rawn thought it wiser, under the circumstances, to let them go than attempt a fight, which he feared would be disastrous. The position was a very strong one, and it is regretted that the Indians could not have been met and driven back on me. It was with a hope of such result that I had sent dispatches in advance as soon as the Indians started upon the Lo Lo Trail. In truth, I should have been in Missoula by the northern route in season had I not been detained by the reports of the return of the hostiles after they had started for Montana. This day our supplies met us, as provided, and we succeeded in making a march upon good roads of 34 miles.

The 9th we proceeded up the Bitter Root Valley, making a little over 20 miles, the cavalry horses being too weak to go farther. We got word from some citizens returning regarding Gibbon's progress. He had passed beyond Ross's Hole and was making rapidly in wagons for Big Hole Valley in close pursuit.

The morning of the 10th, feeling very anxious to form a junction with Gibbon or communicate with him, I have twenty of the best horses picked out, five from each company, under command of Lieutenant Bacon, First Cavalry, and take this detachment with the Indian scouts, 17 in number, as escort, and ride all day from 4 A. M., generally at a trot, making at sundown 53 miles, the last 16 miles was over the Rocky Mountain divide. Here I found myself from 15 to 18 miles from Col. Gibbon's position. Seven volunteers who had left after his battle met us on the road just before we encamped, and gave a fearful picture of matters at the front. They report that Colonel Gibbon had been successful at first in yesterday's battle but that the enemy had rallied and driven him into a dangerous position, taking his artillery, cut off his supplies, and killed and wounded more than half his force, including all of his officers but one, and that he was in distress, without blankets or food or a medical officer. I knew that men escaping from the field invariably exaggerate the horrors of a battle, and made due allowance on this account for their stories. Yet I was intensely anxious for Gibbon's command till I came in sight of it, between nine and ten the next day. His wagons were near his fortified camp, his men were bathing and washing their clothes at the creek, and the horse's grazing quietly in the bottom. There was no sign of an enemy in the vicinity. On reaching his position, which was on a wooded point just above the willow bottom, we found Colonel Gibbon himself, but all cheerful and confident as troops are wont to be who have remained in position and slept on the battle field. They had saved their supplies at the reserve camp, excepting about 2,000 rounds of ammunition captured while enroute to the front. After his first successful assault at dawn on the 9th, Colonel Gibbon had withdrawn to this point, and had been very much annoyed by Indian sharpshooters posted in favorable positions above and beyond him, some of them being between him and his supply camp. When in this condition, the evening of the 9th Sergeant Sutherland, Company B, First Cavalry, whom I had sent from Hot Springs, Lo Lo Trail, reached him and I reported I was coming. Colonel Gibbon said this gave them great encouragement and the men cheered. Ahead of us, during the last 10 or 12 miles, the fresh moccasin tracks of an Indian Scout indicated that the hostiles were apprised of my approach so that though we were not permitted to participate in the battle, which evidently did the Indians much damage, yet our extraordinary marches and early approach were not lost, for the Indians had abandoned their apparent advantage and left Colonel Gibbon's position at eleven o'clock the night before our arrival. When I met the seven volunteers from Gibbon's battle, the evening of the 10th, a messenger was immediately dispatched who went back forty miles to order the cavalry forward. A messenger from Colonel Gibbon's supply camp was sent me by Sergeant Sutherland, who taking another route, passed on by my camp without meeting me. Major Mason in charge, sends back to the Infantry, at least two marches away, to hasten forward, and moves on with the cavalry, coming up the afternoon of the 12th. Colonel Gibbon had also sent a dispatch, begging that a medical officer be sent to him. This dispatch also passed me by enroute. Surgeon C. T. Alexander and Assistant Surgeon Fitzgerald being present with the cavalry, made the ride

of 53 miles without rest, reaching Gibbon's camp ten hours before the command. They were thanked by the Colonel for the prompt, effective, and generous aid which they rendered to more than 30 wounded officers and men.

The next day, the 13th of August, Colonel Gibbon, with the wounded starts for Deer Lodge, detailing to accompany my cavalry, fifty of his command under Captain Browning, Seventh Infantry, Hoping to overtake the enemy before he gets beyond the Big Hole Valley, I engage to permit this company to return home from Bannock City, 60 miles distant. I march 23 miles and pitch camp, and here I am overtaken by Captain Wells and Lieutenant Humphrey's companies, fifty strong, in wagons. A courier arrives from Horse Prairie with the story that eight men had been murdered near the head of the valley the night before; that the enemy, instead of passing near Bannock City, had left the Big Hole country by a pass to Horse Prairie, farther to the right, called "Bloody Dick Canyon".

From my full conviction that the Indians were working toward their old haunts in the Buffalo country, and were only deviating to blind our pursuit and get supplies for themselves undisturbed by large settlements, I resolved to head them off by pushing to their left first at some point along the stage-road from Deer Lodge to Corrinne or at Henry Lake; so in that view I determine to continue my march through Bannock.

Tuesday, the 14th, we march 25 miles. More messengers arrive from Horse Prairie, bearing a letter from Sheriff Bray. The Indians left the head of Horse Prairie, bearing to the right, and toward the junction in Lemhi Valley. A few hostile raiders having secured some 200 horses from Horse Prairie; also some straggling parties were reported as at the head of the prairie and moving as if to return to "Bloody Dick Canyon", and being so near the Indians, I determined to retain Capt. Browning's command a little longer. On the 15th, sending Lieutenant Adams, First Cavalry, ahead to secure supplies and forward them to camp, we leave Bannock City a little to our left and march on to Barrett's ranch. A message from Colonel Shoup of the Volunteers, shows that the Indians have enveloped the temporary fortifications at the junction, Lemhi Valley, which contains some forty people, and that he, himself, with some sixty Bannock volunteer militia had reconnoitered their camp and found them too strong for him. The Indian camp was situated west of the junction, and Colonel Shoup, with his men, was near Fort Lemhi. I was urged by everybody I met from Lemhi and Horse Prairie to go straight to Lemhi and by Col. Shoup to take my way by the fort. But with the same conviction as ever, I knew that my pursuit of them by a stern chase would be hopeless should I attempt to do this. Yet, for fear that they might murder more people before leaving Lemhi Valley I agree to try and intercept them by a trail that would put me east of their position. In the night I was relieved of my embarrassment by another courier, bearing intelligence that the Indians had moved rapidly eastward in the direction of Birch Creek, agreeing with the people of the fortification not to harm them. Therefore, on the 16th, I continue my march for the stage-road hoping to reach the point where the Indians will cross it before they can, whether they emerge by Sheep Creek basin or Medicine Lodge. Two companies of volunteers, Captains Stewart and Clark, had joined me the day before at Horse Prairie. As I was moving this morning a courier comes up bringing a note from Captain Clark, which states that these companies have resolved to make two day's march into Medicine Lodge Valley and then return home.

I immediately send an aide, Lieut. C. E. S. Wood, to explain my movement, and to show them that theirs will be likely to result as a diversion in favor of the enemy, and request that they move near my right flank, watching all approaches from the right. They consider the matter, and for some reason return home. We encamp at Red Rock stage-station.

On the 17th, the march is continued for 23 miles to Junction Station. Capt. Browning, with his command, having been detached, sets out for Deer Lodge. As soon as we are encamped, Major Sanford, commanding the cavalry, selects forty cavalymen, who had horses in the best condition of any in the battalion, and details Lieut. George R. Bacon, First Cavalry to command them. I send this picked force, increased by the Indian scouts under their Captain, Mr. Orlando Robbins, with instructions to set out at midnight, and proceed by Red Rock Lake to Mynhold Pass, near Henry Lake, with a view to

intercepting and hindering the Indians should they come in that direction, or of procuring and transmitting to me early information of value.

This expedition was resolutely undertaken. While at the junction, another company of volunteers, under Captain Calloway, arrives from Virginia City and go into camp.

While here I am visited by the superintendent of the stage-road, Mr. Salisbury, who informs me that the stage-line has been interrupted and the Indians have already been seen beyond the Dry Creek Station. Several citizens, with Mr. Charles Carlton, are sent to Pleasant Valley and beyond to watch the enemy. During the night another agent of the road, Mr. Pollinger, rides back in haste from Pleasant Valley, bringing an urgent dispatch from Mr. Salisbury as to conditions of things at the front.

I had not quite determined at this time whether to push my main column down the road with the risk of the Indians getting past me, they having the shorter line, or to send it to Henry Lake by the trail north of the divide. On the morning of the 18th I delay my command in camp, hoping to give the animals a rest and grazing until three o'clock in the afternoon, but go forward myself to Pleasant Valley. While on the road my scouts bring me word that the Indians are in force near Dry Creek Station, and that they all have not crossed the road yet, and that turning off at that station is the best possible road to Henry Lake. Upon this information I sent for my command at once, and it is moved forward with the utmost rapidity to Dry Creek Station, the rear of the column not getting into camp until 10 P. M. Captain Norwood, with his company L of the Second Cavalry, who had overtaken my command in the morning before it marched, encamped at the same point with us. Part of the volunteers returned home from the junction and the remainder came up from Pleasant Valley and stayed there that night. Here Lieutenant Benson joins, having been sent forward by Colonel Gibbon with instructions to organize the volunteers and head off the Indians before they shall emerge from Medicine Lodge, but as I had anticipated the movement, and as the majority of the volunteers had already returned home, he asked to be assigned to duty, and was sent as a Lieutenant to Captain Norwood. The next day, Sunday, the 19th, we leave the stage-line and take the road to our left, soon coming into a large Indian trail.

The command makes camp 18 miles distant, just across the Camas meadows, quite early in the afternoon, and take up a very strong natural position on the first elevated ground which overlooks the meadows toward the west and some lava beds toward the north and east. The cavalry was posted in line of battle covering the camp; the infantry in reserve near the creek, and great pains taken by my Inspector, Major E. C. Mason, Twenty-first Infantry, to cover the camp with pickets in every direction. Before night every animal was brought within, the horses tied to the picket ropes, the animals with the few wagons to their wagons and the bell-mares of the pack trains were hobbled. Captain Calloway's volunteers came up and encamped about one hundred yards from me, across a creek. They are between two streams of water whose banks were fringed by thickets of willows. Two or three Indians were seen by one of our scouts just before night but as this was an ordinary occurrence, it excited little notice. An unusual feeling of security pervaded the camp. My command, with Lieutenant Bacon's detachment, absent, did not at this time exceed in effectiveness one hundred cavalry and fifty infantry. This was, however, sufficient for any defensive purpose. The enemy were encamped 16 or 18 miles farther on toward Lake Henry. They started, as we subsequently learned, before sunset on Sunday evening, and rode back to our position and worked themselves carefully around our camp, sending into the herd a few skillful men.

When everything was in readiness a column of fours, so much like one of our companies in movement as to deceive in the night, approached, at a walk; at the picket line along the road, the column is challenged, but not giving satisfactory answer the picket fires; then immediately there is firing from every quarter. The citizen's camp is near this approach and many of their horses break away. All the mules between the two creeks are easily stampeded, and a rush is made for the other animals. Our men quickly dressed and in position. Our horses at the picket ropes, the mules with Norwood's company, most of the animals at the wagons and at least half the horses of the volunteer company are saved. The enemy escaped in the darkness with some 150 pack animals and horses. Though there was considerable firing, some of the bullets striking the wagons, yet fortunately but one man of the command was hit, and

he only slightly wounded. In a few minutes, as soon as I was informed of what had resulted, I ordered Major Stanford to have the cavalry saddle up at once and to move out just as soon as it was light enough to see, and attempt to recover the lost animals. Carr's, Norwood's and Jackson's companies galloped out a few minutes later accompanied by Major Sanford in command. The moving column of Indians and animals could then just be discovered four or five miles away. I remained to organize the command against an attack which was still possible. The cavalry succeeded in striking the escaping herd, and at first recovered at least half; but many made wild by the charge and firing ran to the enemy. The Indians had hastily prepared defenses behind some rocks, so as to envelop our head of column at least eight miles from our camp. As Captain Carr, in the advance, charged upon the Indians who were driving the mules, his company received the sudden fire from this position. This checked our onward movement. Norwood and Carr went into position nearly abreast of each other, while Jackson and his company came up on the right. Now the skirmish became quite general. Sanford's left was turned and threatened by a considerable force, and, to protect himself, he ordered his men to draw back. Soon his right was also turned and threatened so that there was danger of his being cut off from camp; therefore he hastened to retire from an untenable position. Captain Norwood began to fulfill the order simultaneously with the rest, when finding himself pressed to hard to do it with safety, he selected a defensive position and remained, repelling the enemy from every side. As I received word at camp of the position of affairs at the front, I took Captain Well's company of infantry and Wagner's company of cavalry, and one howitzer under Lieut. Otis, Fourth Artillery, and pushed forward till I came to Sanford's line. Reorganizing it, with the Infantry on the right, we moved slowly forward till we came to Norwood's position, where for a time he had been cut off from the rest of the troops. In the engagement, Lieutenant Benson, serving with him, and five enlisted men were wounded. One enlisted man of Jackson's company was killed and one of Carr's wounded. As I am not prepared to push the pursuit farther at this time, we return to camp, arriving about 3 P. M. The battalions of infantry and artillery overtake me in the evening about 7 o'clock. They had that day made the extraordinary march of forty-six miles, by alternating in the use of wagons. They were stimulated to this activity by hearing of the attack upon my advance.

The 21st, the command advances eighteen miles, the wounded, escorted by the volunteers, taking the road to the rear by the way of Dry Creek to Virginia City. (five of the volunteers, however, accompanied me on the march as far as Henry Lake) During the day's march we were overtaken by several Bannock Indians from Fort Hall, followed in the night by Captain Bainbridge, Fourteenth Infantry, with more Indian Scouts, increasing the number to fifty. These, he told us, were sent by direction of General Crook to report to me and assist me against the hostiles. The scouts were under the immediate charge of Mr. Fisher, Captain Bainbridge merely coming to see them safely under my command.

Next day we make a long march, and camp on the north fork of the Snake River in a glade closely hemmed in by thick woods. The Indians were supposed to be nearby and there were rumors of another attempt at a night attack, which kept the command on the qui vive and prevented the usual rest. I resolved to one more effort to overtake and attack the hostiles before they got beyond Henry Lake, so that we were up a 2 A. M., and on the road before dawn. By 8 A. M., our Indian Scouts; with the column following in sight, had reached Tachee Pass about two miles east of Henry Lake, through which the road to the National Park runs. The hostiles had camped at this point but were already gone. Being necessitated to obtain supplies of every kind, I delayed my main command four days, sending, however, Cushing, Field and Norwood immediately via Fort Ellis, to operate from the Crow Agency, and keeping the Indian Scouts constantly in the neighborhood of the hostile Indians to determine and report the directions they might take, and annoy them by capturing their stock, if opportunity offered.

SUMMARY OF OPERATIONS

The Infantry and Artillery have met the enemy four times:

1st. Skirmish upon the Salmon. The Indians were across the river and retreated after the skirmish. Date, June 28, 1877.

2nd. General engagement; battle of the Clearwater. Date July 11 & 12, 1877.

3rd. Skirmish at crossing of Clearwater at Kamiah. Date July 13, 1877.

4th. Night attack upon our camp at Camas Meadows. Date August 20, 1877.

The Cavalry has engaged the enemy nine times:

1st. Captain Perry's engagement, June 17, 1877 at White Bird Canyon

2nd. Captain Whipple's skirmish with Looking Glass, July 1, 1877 at forks of Clearwater.

3rd. Skirmish of July 3, 1877 near Cottonwood Creek.

4th. Skirmish of July 4, 1877 at Norton's Ranch.

5th. Skirmish at the Wey-Ipe, July 17, 1877.

6th, 7th, 8th and 9th were in conjunction with the infantry and artillery, as named above.

The number of miles marched by the active column of infantry and artillery during the campaign thus far is over eight hundred miles.

The number of miles in the saddle by the cavalry now with me, during the same period, is as follows:

	Miles
Company I (Carr's) in saddle	1,256
Company C (Wagner's) in saddle	1,164
Company B (Jackson's) in saddle	1,017
Company K (Bendire's) in saddle	866

From Kamiah to Henry Lake, at which point the cavalry and infantry arrived together, the command was marching continuously without a day's halt 26 days, making an average of 19.3 miles a day; baggage generally by pack trains, the Indian trail from Kamiah to the Bitter Root Valley being impassable for wagons. The command suffered often for want of shoes, overcoats, and underclothing during the latter part of the march, owing to the rapidity of the march and the difficulty of procuring supplies in Montana. Another cause of serious embarrassment has been the absolute want of money by every department, and the necessity of giving vouchers that do not even pledge the credit of the government. The weather has usually been warm by day, but the late nights exceedingly cold, water freezing in basin overnight an inch thick at Henry Lake, and also at other camps.

The command has lived on the country as much as possible, and supplies have been purchased from the small villages along the route as far as their scanty stores would go. Accompanying this report is a list giving recognition of service and recommending brevet promotions or other substantial award.

Though under known interpretation of law our campaign against hostile Indians is not recognized as yet as war, it has been a severer tax upon the energies of officers and men than any period of the same length of our late Civil War, surely some method must be found to encourage and properly reward gallantry and service hardly ever excelled.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

O. O. HOWARD

Brigadier General, USA, Commanding Dept. of Columbia

TO: LIEUT. COL. J. C. KELTON

Adjutant General, Military Division of the Pacific

San Francisco, California

NOTE BY THE COMPILER:

To complete the story of this epic Indian war, the reports of General Gibbon, Commanding District of Montana and the Commander of the District of the Yellowstone, General Nelson A. Miles are published as a part of this Chapter.

The reports of Colonel Wheaton, Commander of the Left Column of General Howard are also included, in proper sequence.

HEADQUARTERS, LEFT COLUMN, HOWARD'S EXPEDITION

Camp on Spokane River, near Falls, Washington

August 10, 1877

SIR: I have the honor to report the arrival of my command at this point on this, the day designated by Col. E. C. Watkins, inspector of Indian Affairs, for meeting the head men of the several Indian tribes in this section of the country. The Indian chiefs and head men have not yet arrived here; they are reported to be enroute. It is doubtful if we can hold our first council with them before Tuesday, the 14th instant.

No Washington Territorial Volunteers have as yet reported nor do I expect any. My cavalry consists of Company F, First Cavalry (Perry's); total strength, 22 enlisted men. Company H, First Cavalry (Trimble's), is said to be enroute. A portion of it has been detained at Lewiston, Idaho, awaiting a remount. A letter from Col. Sully, of the 6th instant, informed me that part of this company of cavalry would leave Lewiston to join me on the 7th.

I have not heard from General Howard since I left Lewiston, Idaho, and am informed that it is impossible to employ couriers to go to him on the Lo Lo trail, except at the most exorbitant rates. I shall endeavor to communicate with the department commander from this vicinity, near the old Coeur d'Alene Mission and Hell Gate.

I am informed by Captain Harris, First Cavalry, who has this moment arrived from Fort Colville, that some of the Indians summoned to meet Col. Watkins here today were 200 miles west of Colville when sent for, and I fear that our detention here will be much longer than I anticipated; but as the report that Joseph and his hostile band turned south after reaching the Bitter Root seems to be confirmed, this column, which has been moving in the opposite direction, can hardly hope to cooperate very directly with the pursuing troops, who are separated from us by a range of great mountains, and moving in a different direction.

Had Joseph turned north or northwest, which at one time seemed likely, we would have been, as the department commander intended, precisely in position to engage him.

I am satisfied that our march through this portion of the Coeur d'Alene and Spokane country has had the best effect in reassuring frontier settlers who were naturally greatly alarmed at the Nez Perce's outbreak, and in causing restless and excited young Indians to remain with their tribes. Settlers are rapidly returning to their ranches, harvesting their crops, and are greatly cheered at the presence of troops in this section.

Col. E. C. Watkins and myself are working together harmoniously, and after our anticipated "talks" with the representatives of some nine thousand Indians, I hope we will have accomplished much that the department commander desires settled in this portion of his command.

A supply train of ten citizen's teams reached me on the 8th from Lewiston Depot. I shall unload and store these supplies here until needed, and return the teams tomorrow for discharge. I hope to have all my hired teams soon replaced by government teams, and thus greatly reduce the expense of our movement.

The teams furnished were hastily collected, are indifferent animals, and haul very small wagons, many of them worn out, and have frequently caused annoying delays.

The health of the command is excellent. While writing this Colonel Merriam furnishes me by courier a copy of General Howard's dispatch to Captain Sladen, aid-de-camp of August 6th, confirming the southern movement of Joseph's band.

I will communicate the result of the council soon to be held here.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

FRANK WHEATON

Colonel, Second Infantry, Commanding

TO THE ASSISTANT ADJUTANT GENERAL

Department of the Columbia, Portland, Oregon

HEADQUARTERS LEFT COLUMN, HOWARD'S EXPEDITION

Camp at Spokane Falls, Wash., August 18, 1877

GENERAL: I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt from Lieutenant Bailey, Twenty-first Infantry, on the 17th, of your instructions of the 9th instant. Your orders of the 7th, sent by Courier Baker from Missoula, Mont., were received by me on the 16th instant, at this camp, and within an hour copied and forwarded by special courier to Major Green, First Cavalry, commanding near Mount Idaho.

This command arrived here on the 10th instant, the day designated by Indian Inspector Watkins for the assembling of the chiefs and head men of the various tribes located in this region. Colonel Watkins and your aid, Captain Wilkinson, came with me to this point. Colonel Watkins found it impossible to assemble the council of chiefs until the 16th. This delay was necessary and advantageous, as affording the best-disposed Indians of influence an opportunity to bring disaffected Indians, particularly the Spokane tribe, to a more correct understanding of the government requirements. I think they all understand now that all Indians in your department will be compelled to elect, either to become citizens of the United States or go upon designated reservations.

I regret that Spokane Chief Moses was not at the council. Colonel Watkins informs me that it is doubtful if he received any notice to appear, through some misunderstanding of the inspector's agents. The arrangements for the reservation for the Upper Spokanes, particularly "Spokane Garry's" band, are incomplete. Garry yesterday desired to become a citizen, and until some understanding can be positively reached regarding reimbursement of those Spokanes who have made improvements, they will be obliged to leave. Colonel Watkins preferred leaving many questions concerning them unsettled until his return to Washington.

The Coeur d'Alenes, Colvilles, Okanagons, Pend'Oreilles, Lower Spokanes, Calaspelles, and the small band of Palouse Indians seem to be satisfactorily located, and I doubt if through any act of theirs any trouble will be made in your department. As settlements increase near the reservation for the above named Indians, complications with citizens must be expected. The Coeur d'Alenes, under Chief Sattis, deserve special credit for their efforts to keep other Indians quiet during Joseph's outbreak, and the protection they have - and voluntarily - rendered the settlers near them; they have in several instances, kept up fences, saved wheat and out-fields, and protected valuable property at abandoned ranches.

At the earnest request of Inspector Watkins, I will delay the departure of this column to comply with your last orders, a day or two, until the several bands of Indians have left this vicinity and gone to their homes and fisheries. Though no depredations have been committed in this neighborhood, settlers have not yet quite recovered from the alarm occasioned by the outbreak of Joseph's band of Nez Perces, and in the spirit of your first instructions I will continue to do all possible to allay their fears and induce the speedy return of confidence and quiet; I believe much has already been accomplished in that direction. Of course every settler would like to have a military post located very near his ranch.

Elder Havemail, of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and I think four other citizens are located at these falls. The elder has a quarter-section here, and an interest in the ownership of the Falls water power, where a saw-mill is completed and a grist-mill in progress of construction. He informs me that he had written you and induced many to join him in asking for militia protection, You will probably receive many such letters or petitions.

When funds are available for the purpose I would recommend the establishment of a large post at some point on or near the Spokane River, probably between the Upper Bridge and Lower Ferry. I will examine the country near the Upper Bridge tomorrow. I will report to your adjutant-general at Portland the letters and commanders of the companies I leave, as you direct, at Palouse Bridge to remain there until or during cold weather, in order that I may instruct them regarding supplies, protection of the same, tents for the troops, etc. Your orders names these two companies as an outpost, and until otherwise directed I will therefore report them as on detached service from my command.

Companies I (Conrad's) and K (Daggett's), Twelfth Infantry, I will leave at Palouse Bridge; Companies C (Drum's) and B (Trowbridge's, commanded by Lieutenant Haines), I will send to report to Major Green, First Cavalry.

In the discretion you gave me to camp my command near Lewiston, Idaho, I will, unless you desire otherwise, camp with it near Lapwai, as the water at Lewiston is unusually bad this season and sickened myself and many of the officers and enlisted men during my detention there awaiting transportation for this movement. I am told there is no good camp nearer than Lapwai post, and by being there I avoid the bad water of Lewiston. If it should not be necessary for me to move south in order to conform to any anticipated movement of the hostiles, perhaps it would be a convenience and facilitate questions of supplies, issues, etc, if I were authorized to assume command at Lapwai while you continue this force in that vicinity.

Before leaving my camp near Lewiston I ordered Colonel Grover, First Cavalry, as you had directed, to report for duty with this column; but on learning that no Washington Volunteers were to join me, I informed Colonel Sully, Twenty-first Infantry, that I would have no adequate mounted force for Colonel Grover to command, and requested that he be sent back to Walla Walla. Colonel Grover reached Lewiston the day after I left that point and was immediately relieved from further duty with this command.

Lieutenant Colonel Merriam, Second Infantry, joined me at a point 12 miles north of Lewiston, and was on the same day ordered back to Lewiston by Colonel Sully, to act in the name of the latter at Lewiston Depot during Colonel Sully's absence.

Your dispatch of August 9th, stopping my further advance, and sent from your camp 15 miles south of Corvallis, Mont., I received here, via Portland and Walla Walla, at 6:15 P. M. on the 14th instant. Should the hostiles turn southwest toward Colonel Green's command, you may rely upon the prompt movements of this force in that direction.

I am, General, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

FRANK WHEATON

Colonel, Second Infantry, Brevet Maj Gen, USA, Commanding

TO GENERAL OLIVER O. HOWARD, Comd Department of the Columbia, In the field pursuing Joseph's band of Nez Perces (By courier to Missoula, Montana)

HEADQUARTERS, DISTRICT OF MONTANA

Fort Shaw, Montana, September 2, 1877

Sir: I have the honor to submit the following report of recent operations in this district: Upon telegraphic information that the hostile Nez Perces had started westward over the Lo Lo Trail, I ordered one of the companies at Camp Baker (D) and the company at Fort Benton (F), with the exception of six men, to move at once to Fort Shaw. They were concentrated there on the 27th of July. The next day, with Company K and every man to be spared from the post, the command, numbering eight officers and seventy six men, commenced the march for Missoula, via Cadotte's Pass, with pack mules. The distance, 150 miles, was accomplished in seven days, the command reaching the new post near Missoula late in the afternoon of the 3rd of August in wagons sent out to meet it, preceded the day before by myself and the mounted detachment under Lieutenant James H. Bradley. The Nez Perces, with a large herd of horses, had, on the 28th instant, succeeded in avoiding Captain Rawn's little command by marching around it, and had turned up the valley of the Bitter Root. They were then leisurely moving up the valley, halting for a day or two at a time to trade off to the inhabitants their stolen stock and plunder for fresh horses, food, and supplies of all kinds, including ammunition. The pitiful spectacle was presented of these red-handed plunderers, fresh from the slaughter of the peaceful settlers of a neighboring territory, being furnished by the citizens of Montana with fresh supplies, which enabled them to continue their flight and their murderous work in other parts of the territory. One bright exception stands out in bold relief to what appears to have been the rule in the lower part of the Bitter Root Valley, Mr. Young of Corvallis, refused to barter for their blood money, closed his store, and dared them to do their worst.

On the 4th, with my command re-enforced with seven officers and all the men to be spared by Captain Rawn's command (which had in the meantime been strengthened by Company G, Seventh Infantry, and every available man to be spared from Fort Ellis) I left the post at one o'clock, with 15 officers and 146 men, in wagons, and moved to Stevensville, which we reached about nine o'clock, a distance of some twenty-five miles. The next day we made thirty miles, and were joined by a number of citizens from the upper valley, who volunteered as scouts and to join us in the fight, if we should overtake the Indians.

I had been informed that beyond a certain point it would be impracticable to take wagons, and therefore brought along our pack-mules, intending, when the time came, to cut loose from our wagons and take to the packs; but on this day I was fortunate enough to secure the services of Mr. Joe Blodget, a man thoroughly acquainted with the country, who assured me that he had brought a lightly-loaded wagon over the trail all the way from Bannock, and that it was possible although difficult road.

The road was excellent until we commenced to climb the divide separating us from Ross's Hole, at the extreme upper end of Bitter Root Valley. Here the ascent was so steep, rugged, and crooked that we were compelled to halt at nightfall and make a dry camp before reaching the summit, having succeeded in making 13-1/2 miles, with a still steeper ascent before us the next day.

We had up to this time been passing regularly the Indian camping grounds, which showed they were moving at the rate of about twelve or fourteen miles a day, so that if we could continue to double that distance the question of overtaking the enemy was simply one of time. No accurate estimate of their strength could be made, as many of them occupied simple brush shelters. It was observed, also, that the teepee-poles, always left standing in their camps, were collected each night for temporary purposes, and no signs of teepee-poles nor travois for wounded were seen on the trail. The best estimate of their strength I could obtain from the inhabitants of the valley gave them 260 warriors, all of whom were well-armed and with a plentiful supply of ammunition.

On camping at the foot of the main divide of the Rocky Mountains, on the evening of the 7th, Lieutenant Bradley, who had been sent in advance during the day with his mounted men and a small party of citizens, offered to make a night march, if possible to overtake the camp, and make an attempt to stampede the herd, which every indication showed was large. Some twenty five of the citizens volunteered to accompany him, as did also Lieutenant J. W. Jacobs, regimental quartermaster, Seventh Infantry, his nephew Mr. S. J. Herron, of Kentucky, Sergeant Wilson, Company I, Seventh Infantry, and Bostwick, the post guide of Fort Shaw.

In accordance with his suggestion, Lieutenant Bradley, with his command, amounting to some sixty men, was ordered to push forward during the night, and try to strike the camp before daylight.

The next morning the main body resumed the march at five o'clock, and at once commenced to ascend the formidable barrier in front, the difficulties of the road being increased by quantities of fallen timber, which had to be removed or got around.

Our wagons were only lightly loaded, and by doubling teams and using men at drag ropes we succeeded in reaching the summit, a distance of about two miles, in six hours. From thence a gentle incline led for over twenty miles down into the Big Hole Basin. But the road was much obstructed by fallen timber and a difficult stream, with abrupt banks, which we were obliged to cross numerous times. Here the services of our excellent guide, Joe Blodget, were most valuable, and but for him, we could not possibly have made even the time we did.

Before we had reached the summit I received a courier from Lieutenant Bradley informing me that the distance he had to pass over was greater than was supposed, and that daylight had overtaken him before he had succeeded in reaching the camp of the Indians. We pushed ahead without waiting to rest or feed the animals, and later in the day I received another message from him informing me that he had discovered the location of the Indian camp, had concealed his command in the hills, and was awaiting my arrival. Fearing the Indians would discover him, I left the train under charge of one company (Logan's), to come on as fast as possible, and started forward with the rest of the command and the mountain howitzer, but with all the speed we could make it was nearly sunset before we reached

Lieutenant Bradley's position, and the Indian camp was still four or five miles distant. The train was now brought up, closely parked amidst the brush of the little valley down which we were travelling, and the animals turned out to rest and feed. No fires were built, and after posting pickets, all laid down to rest until ten o'clock. At that hour, the command, now consisting of 17 officers, 132 men, and 34 citizens, started down the trail on foot, each man being provided with ninety rounds of ammunition. The howitzer could not accompany the column, in consequence of the quantity of fallen timber obstructing the trail, and the noise which would have to be made in removing it. Orders were therefore given that at early daylight it should start after us, with a pack-mule loaded with two thousand rounds of extra ammunition.

The 34 citizens who volunteered to accompany us being joined by Lieutenant Bradley's command, the advance was given to him, and the column moved in silence down the trail, the night being clear and starlight. After proceeding about three miles the country opened out into the Big Hole Basin, and still following the trail guided by one of the citizens who knew the locality, we turned to the left and followed along the low foot-hills soon coming in sight of fires. After proceeding about a mile from where we emerged from the mountains, we passed through a point of timber projecting out into the valley, and just beyond encountered a large herd of ponies grazing along the hillside. As we silently advanced they commenced neighing, but fortunately did not become alarmed, and by the time we had passed through the herd the outline of the teepees could be made out in the bottom below.

The command was now halted, and all laid down to wait for daylight. Here we waited for two hours in plain hearing of the barking dogs, crying babies, and other noises of the camp. Just before daylight, Sanno's company, and then Comba's were sent down into the valley and deployed as skirmishers, and as day began to break and enabling me to make out the ground beneath us, I found that the tepees, in the form of an open V with the apex toward us, extended along the opposite side of a large creek some two or three hundred yards from us. The intervening space between the camp and the foot of the slope upon which we stood was almost entirely covered with a dense growth of willow brush, in the grassy spaces between which herds of ponies were grazing. A deep slough with water in places waist deep wound through this bottom from left to right, and had to be crossed before the stream itself could be reached. As the light increased, Comba and Sanno were ordered to move forward, then Bradley and his citizens on the left, with Rawn and Williams in support. All pushed forward in perfect silence, while now scarcely a sound issued from the camp. Suddenly a single shot on the extreme left rang out in the clear morning air, followed quickly by several others, and the whole line pushed rapidly forward through the brush. Logan's company being sent in on the run on the extreme right. A heavy fire was at once opened along the whole line of tepees, the startled Indians rushing from them in every direction, and for a few minutes no shots were returned. Comba and Sanno first struck the camp at the apex of the V, crossed the main stream, and delivered their fire at close range into the tepees and the Indians as they poured from them. Many of the Indians broke at once for the brush, and sheltering themselves behind the creek-bank opened fire on the troops as they came into the open ground. This was especially the case on the right or upper end of the camp where the creek made a bend toward our line. As Logan on the right of the line swept forward, our men found themselves directly at the back of these Indians, and here the greatest slaughter took place. In less than twenty minutes we had complete possession of the whole camp, and orders were given to commence destroying it.

But the Indians had not given up the fight, and while a portion of the command were engaged in setting fire to the tepees, other portions were occupied in replying to the rifle shots, which now came upon us from every direction - the brush, the creek-bank, the open prairie, and the distant hills. The fire from these latter positions, although at long range, was by far the most deadly, and it soon became evident that the enemy's sharpshooters, hidden behind trees, rocks, etc., possessed an immense advantage over us, insomuch that we could not compete with them. At almost every crack of the rifle from the distant hills some member of the command was sure to fall. My acting adjutant Lieut. C. A. Woodruff, and myself with our horses, were wounded at this time. Under these circumstances, the only remedy was to take up some position where we would be more on an equality with the enemy. Orders

were, therefore, reluctantly given to withdraw through the brush to a position under the hill from which we had first started, and then push for the timber through which we had passed in the night.

This movement was successfully accomplished, such of our wounded as we could find being carried with us, and the few Indians who occupied the timber being driven out. Here we took up positions, and sheltering ourselves behind the trees, fallen logs, etc., replied to the fire of the sharpshooters, who soon gathered around us, occupying the brush below and the timber above.

For a time their fire was very close and deadly; and here Lieutenant English received a mortal wound; Captain Williams was struck a second time, and a large number of men killed and wounded. The Indians crawled up as closely as they dared to come, and with yells of encouragement urged each other on, but our men met them with a bold front, and our fire, as we afterward learned by the blood and dead Indians found, punished them severely.

Just as we took up our position in the timber two shots from our howitzer on the trail above us were heard, and we afterward learned that the gun and pack-mule with ammunition were, on the road to us intercepted by Indians. The non-commissioned officers in charge, Sergeants Daly and Fredericks and Corporal Sales, made the best resistance they could, whilst the two privates cowardly fled at the first appearance of danger and never stopped till they had put a hundred miles between themselves and the battle-field, spreading, of course, as such cowards always do, the most exaggerated reports of dire calamity which had overtaken the entire command. The piece was fired twice, and as the Indians closed around it, the men used their rifles. Corporal Sales was killed, the two sergeants wounded, the animal was shot down, and Private John O. Bennett, the driver, entangled in their fall, cutting himself loose, he succeeded in reaching the brush and escaped to the train, which the two sergeants, Blodgett, the guide, and Williams a colored servant of Lieutenant Jacobs, also reached. In the meantime our fight in the timber continued with more or less activity all day. But every hour was increasing the strength of our position, when a new danger threatened us. A strong wind was blowing from the west, and taking advantage of this, the Indians set fire to the grass, intending, doubtless, to follow up the fire and make a dash upon us while we were blinded by the dense smoke. But fortunately the grass was too green to burn rapidly, and before the fire reached any of the dead timber lying about us, it went out. The Indians remained around us firing occasionally nearly all night. They had, however, broken camp immediately after we had abandoned it and sent off their women and children and herds in a southerly direction.

During the night I sent a runner to the train and two others to Deer Lodge via French's Gulch, for medical assistance and supplies, fearing our train had been captured. This fear was increased early next morning on the arrival of a courier from General Howard, who said he had seen nothing of it. He had passed it in the darkness of the night without seeing it. Later in the day we communicated with the train, but the Indians in small parties still appearing in the interval which separated us from it, I sent Captain Browning with twenty five men to bring it in and it reached us just before sundown, bringing us our much needed blankets and provisions, not, however, until we had partially consumed the flesh of Lieut. Wondruff's horse, brought wounded to our position and conveniently killed by the Indians inside our lines. The Indians gave us a parting shower of bullets about 11 o'clock that night and we saw no more of them afterwards.

Parties were sent out on the 11th to bury the dead, all of whom were found, recognized, and decently interred, and to recover the howitzer, which was found concealed in the brush, the carriage-wheels being carried off.

At 10 A. M., General Howard reached my camp, having pushed forward with a small escort, under the belief that he was coming to a sorely beleaguered party, and the next morning his medical officers arrived and gave to our suffering wounded the much needed attendance. The following day having assigned to duty with General Howard, to aide in the pursuit, fifty men of my command, under Captain Browning and Lieutenants Wright and Van Orsdale, all of whom volunteered for the service, I left the battlefield with the wounded and the balance of the command for Deer Lodge, over ninety miles distant. I reached that place on the 15th, and the command the next day, thanks to the spontaneous assistance promptly forwarded to us by the citizens of Helena, Deer Lodge and Butte.

In closing the report, I desire to speak in the most commendatory terms of the conduct of both officers and men (with the exception of the two cowards who deserted the howitzer). With the exception of Captain Logan and Lieutenant Bradley, both of whom were killed very early in the action, every officer came under my personal observation at some time during the fight, and were all so active, zealous, and courageous, not only in themselves fighting and cheering on their men, but in prompt obedience to every order, I find it out of the question to make an attempt at discrimination, and will simply mention the names of those who were present in the battle:

They were Captains C. C. Rawn, Richard Comba, George L. Browning, J. M. J. Sanno, Constant Williams (wounded twice) and William Logan (Killed); First Lieutenants C. A. Cooledge (wounded three times), James H. Bradley (killed), J. W. Jacobs, Regimental Quartermaster Allen H. Jackson, George H. Wright, and William H. English (mortally wounded and since dead); and Second Lieutenants C. A. Woodruff, Acting Adjutant (wounded three times), J. F. Van Orsdale, E. E. Harden, and Francis Woodbridge.

For the officers engaged in this sharp little affair I have nothing to ask, and am unable to persuade myself to ask for that next to nothing, a brevet. But I earnestly urge that the authorities may ask Congress the enactment of a special law, giving officers below the grade of field officers, and soldiers wounded in battle the same increase in pay as they are now entitled to for every five years of service, the law to go into effect from the commencement of the present fiscal year.

* * * * *

Captain Comba, who had charge of our burial party, reports eighty-three Indians found on the field, and six more dead warriors were found in a ravine some distance from the battle-field after the command left there.

* * * * *

I am, sir, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

JOHN GIBBON

Colonel, Seventh Infantry, Commanding

TO: THE ASSISTANT ADJUTANT GENERAL
DEPARTMENT OF DAKOTA, SAINT PAUL, MINN.

HEADQUARTERS DISTRICT OF YELLOWSTONE
Cantonment at Tongue River, Montana, Sep. 17, 1877

GENERAL A. H. TERRY
COMMANDING DEPARTMENT OF DAKOTA

The inclosed dispatches just received. I fear that the request for more troops has reached me too late. I will leave nine companies of infantry and one of cavalry at this point and on the Yellowstone. With the remainder I will strike across by head of Big Dry Musselshell, Crooked Creek, and Carroll, with the hope of intercepting the Nez Perces in their movement north. I presume that Generals Howard and Sturgis will follow up the Missouri, and I earnestly request that an abundance of rations and grain be sent up the Missouri for the commands that will be on the river.

The steamers are liable to meet the commands at mouth of Musselshell or above on the Missouri. If the stores are not all required on the Missouri they can be transported across to these posts. I would request not less than 60,000 rations and all the grain that can be forwarded (say 500,000 pounds) also officer stores and a quantity of clothing, which will be needed, be sent up the Missouri.

I will send couriers to Carroll to meet the boats. The Infantry companies at Peck can be employed as guards for stores.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

N. A. MILES

Colonel, 5th Inf, Brevet Maj. Gen., USA, Commanding

HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF THE COLUMBIA
Bridger's Crossing, Clark's Fork, Wyoming Territory
September 12, 1877

COLONEL; While Colonel Sturgis was scouting toward Stinking Water, the Indians and my force in close pursuit passed his right, and they, after a short detour, turned to Clarke's Fork and by forced marches avoided Sturgis completely.

I have sent Sturgis with Major Stanford, First Cavalry, and Lieut. Otis, Fourth Artillery, with howitzer battery, in fast pursuit, and myself following as rapidly as possible with the remainder of my own immediate command. The Indians are reported going down Clarke's Fork and straight towards the Musselshell. They will in all probability cross the Yellowstone near the mouth of Clarke's Fork, and make all haste to join a band of hostile Sioux. They will use every exertion to reach the Musselshell country and form this junction, and as they make exceedingly long marches it will require unusual activity to intercept them. I earnestly request you to make every effort in your power to prevent the escape of this hostile band, and at least to hold them in check until I can overtake them. Please send me return couriers with information of your and the hostiles whereabouts, your intended movements, and any other information I ought to know.

Yours respectfully,

O. O. HOWARD
Brigadier General, Commanding Expedition

TO: COL. N. A. MILES, FIFTH INFANTRY

Crossing of the Yellowstone, near
Mouth of Clarke's Fork
13 September - 9 A. M.

DEAR GENERAL: I forwarded dispatch just received from General Howard who is some 38 miles in my rear, I have also a duplicate which I will endeavor to send by boat if possible. I fear you will be greatly disappointed when you learn that the hostiles have, by sudden and unexpected turn, crossed this river and thrown us hopelessly, I fear, in their rear.

All that you could do was done, and I thought all that we, too, could do was also done to insure their destruction; and indeed, four days ago I would not have given a dollar to have had their capture insured to me; but the absence of a single guide, who had ever been in the country in which we were operating, taken in connection with our ignorance of it, and its exceedingly rough and broken character, and my inability to learn anything of Howard's position, enabled them to elude me at the very moment I felt sure of success. This is extremely mortifying to me, I assure you, and we are doing all that human endurance can possibly accomplish to circumvent them yet.

My animals are shoeless and broken down, and my command without rations, yet made fifty miles yesterday, and will try to do so until we overtake them; but while we are crossing the river, their scouts are on the hills opposite watching us, and I fear the main body has some thirty-six hours the start. I have no suggestions to offer, as I presume General Howard, in the accompanying dispatch, has laid the situation before you in detail.

I am, general, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

S. D. STURGIS
Colonel, Seventh Cavalry, Commanding

REPORT OF COLONEL NELSON A. MILES ON FINAL OPERATION

HEADQUARTERS DISTRICT OF YELLOWSTONE, IN THE FIELD
Camp near North end of Bear's Paw Mountain, Montana

October 6, 1877

Sir: I have the honor to report having received on the evening of the 17th ultimo, a communications dated the 12th from General Howard, then on Clark's Fork, stating that the Nez Perces had evaded the commands to the north of them and were pushing northward. I at once organized all the available force of my command for a movement to intercept them or pursue them. The command left the cantonment on the morning of the 18th. The different orders regarding escort for the commission had already put enroute the battalion, Second Cavalry, and one company (Hale's) Seventh Cavalry. These were taken up on the march. The command reached the Missouri River, at the mouth of the Musselshell, on the 23rd day of September, but, learning on the morning of the 25th, that the Nez Perces had crossed Cow Island on the 23rd, had destroyed the depot there and moved northward, I immediately crossed the Missouri River. The command on the 26th moved northward from mouth of Musselshell, and on the 27th, leaving my train to follow, pushed on rapidly by the northern of the Little Rockies, thence across the northern end of Bear's Paw mountains, which point I reached on the evening of the 29th. On the same evening the trail was discovered by my scouts entering the range from the left. Starting at 4 o'clock on the 30th, and moving around the northern end of the mountains, the trail was struck at 6 A. M. near the head of the Snake River; the village shortly afterward was discovered on Eagle Creek, and was immediately charged, the battalions, Seventh Cavalry (Captain Hale) and Fifth Infantry (Capt. Snyder), attacking in front; the battalion, Second Cavalry (Captain Tyler) by circuit attacked in rear and secured the stock to the number of seven hundred (700) horse, mules and ponies; the fighting was very severe, and at close quarters; the Indians took refuge in some deep ravines, and their firing was accurate and well kept up. Having at the first outset surprised and shut up the greater part of the Indians in the village, and cut off and secured the greater part of their stock, and perceiving that the position could be carried by storm only with very heavy loss, I determined to maintain my lines around them, keep them under fire, and at the same time give them an opportunity to surrender if they desired. The positions taken up on the 30th were, with slight modifications, maintained during the four succeeding days and nights; meantime a few shells from a 12-pounder Napoleon were thrown in from time to time and a sharp-shooting fire kept up whenever it could be effective. The Indians had from time to time displayed a white flag, but when communicated with had refused to surrender their arms; but on the morning of the 5th they surrendered, Chief Joseph leading, surrendering his arms and ammunition, followed by his band, and their village is in our possession. The fighting, as reported, was sharp, and the losses on both sides considerable. Casualties on the part of the troops were 23 killed and 45 wounded. The Indians admit a loss of Chiefs Looking-Glass, Too-hool-hul-sole, Ollicut, a brother of Joseph and two others of their principal men, and twenty five killed and forty- six wounded.

The endurance and courage of the command, as tested by the forced marches and hardy contested fight at short range, are worthy of highest commendation. A severe storm of snow and wind, which set in on the 1st instant, added greatly to the hardships, which have been borne without murmuring. The opportune arrival of the train under escort commander Captain Brotherton, enable me to protect the wounded from the worst effects of the storm. I propose tomorrow to march hence toward the Missouri. The force of General Howard, including the command of General Sturgis, following the trail of the Nez Perces, is approaching from the Missouri. The general arrived at evening of the 4th, having moved forward in advance of his command with a small escort.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

NELSON A. MILES

Col., Fifth Infantry, Brevet Maj Gen, USA, Commanding

ASSISTANT ADJUTANT GENERAL
DEPARTMENT OF DAKOTA, SAINT PAUL, MINN.

HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF THE COLUMBIA
IN THE FIELD, STEAMER BENTON, MISSOURI RIVER

GENERAL P. H. SHERIDAN
COMMANDING DIVISION OF MISSOURI

October 19, 1877

It is due you as commander of this Military Division to know the facts that I have already telegraphed General McDowell from the battlefield concerning the final operations and surrender of the hostile Nez Perces. First, on the 11th of September, I assumed command of Sturgis' troops after I had passed him at Clarke's Fork, and he operated in conjunction with my force proper to the close. The advance, Sturgis immediately commanding, then made a forced march of eighty five miles in two days, struck the hostiles, captured quite a number of their ponies, killed and wounded several warriors, and drove them beyond the Musselshell.

The 12th of September I sent from Clarke's Fork a dispatch to Colonel Miles, showing him that the Indians were making for the Musselshell country by exceeding by long marches and urging unusual activity, and earnestly requested him to make every effort in his power to prevent the escape of the hostile band.

Colonel Miles received the dispatch at Tongue River the evening of the 16th and promptly moved his command - two battalions of Second and Seventh Cavalry, and one of his own mounted Infantry on the 17th to the mouth of the Musselshell.

Meanwhile, as he requested nine days to get into position, I "slowed" my march to about fifteen miles per day, knowing that the hostiles watching me would do the same. They slackened their pace after crossing the Missouri at Cow Island. As soon as Miles found they were beyond the Missouri, he crossed where he was, and made forced marches diagonally across our front to the north of Bear Paw Mountains, and struck the Indians about 7 A. M. of the 30th ultimo. They were encamped near a creek bottom in a strong natural position, but their numerous ponies, now nearly worn out, were scattered over the open country grazing. Miles charged the camp and herds simultaneously. A desperate fight occurred, in which two officers and twenty five men were killed and four officers and forty two men wounded. The ponies were nearly all captured - some seven hundred - but the Indians, hemmed in by Mile's pickets, held out until after my arrival. Firing was still going on the evening of the 4th. I had with me two friendly Nez Perces and an interpreter.

The two Nez Perces were sent the next morning into the hostile camp. Through them the surrender was arranged. A few Indians, including White Bird, crept out through the lines during the night. A portion of my artillery and infantry and Sturgis' cavalry were brought up within twenty five miles of the battlefield, but as the Sioux under Sitting Bull continued quiet, I deemed it best on account of the difficulty of supplying the command to return the foot troops to the Missouri. Sturgis' cavalry was ordered to report to Colonel Miles, and moved in conjunction with him back to the mouth of the Musselshell. I embarked my troops on the Steamer Benton.

On account of Sitting Bull's proximity, I delayed my departure from the 10th to the 13th instant, till Miles, burdened with the wounded and the Indian prisoners, 375 in number, had reached the Missouri. Colonel Sturgis and his regiment deserve special credit for energetic, persistent, and successful work. Colonel Miles and his command have and deserve the great honor of the final battle and surrender, while appreciation and gratitude are due our officers and men who engaged the hostiles with success in Idaho, have cheerfully made forced marches for 1,600 miles, were a part of the last operating force north of the Missouri, and were represented by their commander at the surrender.

I directed Colonel Miles to keep the prisoners until next spring, it being too late to send them to Idaho by direct routes this fall, and too costly by steamer and rail. Can I meet you in Chicago the 24th instant.

O. O. HOWARD, COMMANDING DEPARTMENT

In forwarding General Howard's reports to the War Department, General McDowell stated that during this campaign the following designated companies stationed in his Division were placed under General Howard's orders and sent to join his command:

Company D, First Cavalry, left the Presidio of San Francisco, for Boise, I. T. via Winnimucca and Camp McDermitt on June 21st.

Company I, First Cavalry, left Camp Halleck, Nevada, for Boise, I. T. via Winnimucca and Camp McDermitt on June 21st.

Company C, First Cavalry, having been joined by Companies D and I, same regiment, left Camp McDermitt, Nevada for Boise City, I. T., under command of Major George B. Stanford, First Cavalry, on June 30, 1877.

Company G, First Cavalry, left San Diego, Cal., June 27th for Boise, I. T. via Southern Pacific Railroad and Winnimucca.

Company B, of Angel Island, and F at Alcatraz Island, 12th Infantry left their stations enroute to Boise, I. T., via Winnimucca June 27, 1877.

Company B, Fourth Artillery, left the Presidio of San Francisco for Boise (equipped as Cavalry) July 3, 1877 via Winnimucca and Camp McDermitt.

Company D, 12th Infantry, left Independence, Cal., July 10, 1877 for Lewiston, I. T., via Portland and Columbia River.

Companies C and L, Fourth Artillery, stationed respectively at the Presidio of San Francisco and Alcatraz Island, Cal. left the Harbor of San Francisco, Cal. for Lewiston, I. T., via Portland and Columbia River, July 13, 1877.

Besides the above enumerated troops pertaining to the Department of Cal., Companies H, Eighth Infantry, and C, 12th Infantry, stationed at Fort Yuma were sent to report, via San Francisco and the Columbia River, for operations in the field. They left Yuma on the 8th of July.

The Second Infantry, transferred from the East to the Pacific Division was also ordered to Lewiston, I. T. via San Francisco, Columbia River departing from San Francisco on the 22nd of July, 1877.

Although most of the troops were still absent in the field, the following as the assignment of units to posts in the Department of the Columbia as of 31 August 1877.

POST	GARRISONED BY	COMMANDERS
Fort Boise, I. T.	Company A, 21st Infantry	Capt. P. Collins
Fort Canby, Oregon	Companies D and G, 4th Artillery	Major J. Stewart
Fort Colville, W. T.	Company M, First Cavalry	Capt. M. Harris
Camp Harney, Oregon	Company K, First Cavalry and Company K, 21st Infantry	Major John Green
Fort Klamath, Oregon	Company B, First Cavalry and Company F, 21st Infantry	Captain James Jackson
Fort Lapwai, I. T.	Company F, First Cavalry and Company G, 21st Infantry	Captain D. Perry
Fort Stevens, Oregon	Companies E and M, Fourth Arty	Capt. W. P. Miller
Fort Townsend, W. T.	Company A, Fourth Artillery and Company C, 21st Infantry	Capt. E. A. Bancroft
Fort Vancouver	Companies D, E and I, 21st Infantry Field Staff and Band, 21st Inf Detachment of Ordnance	Capt. Alfred Sully
Fort Walla Walla, W. T.	Companies E, H and L, First Cavalry Companies B and H, 21st Infantry Field Staff & Band, 1st Cavalry	Col. C. Grover

Lewiston, I. T.
(Temporary)

Company D, 12th Infantry
2nd Regiment of Infantry
Field Staff and Band, 2nd Inf

Col. Frank Wheaton

NOTE: Companies A, G and M, Fourth Artillery and Company B, 21st Infantry were withdrawn from Alaska when posts thereat were abandoned on 14 June 1877. The Artillery units were assigned to Forts Townsend, Canby and Stevens, the Infantry company to Fort Vancouver.

In closing out this chapter it is felt that it would be incomplete unless the final disposition of Joseph and his band was told. Brigadier General John Gibbon, commanding the Department of the Columbia in his annual report for the year 1885 advised the General, commanding the Division of the Pacific as follows:

* * * * *

"Probably the most important event of the year, certainly the most important to the Indians themselves, has been the return to this department of the remnant of Chief Joseph's band of Nez Perces - now principally composed of old men, women, and children, widows and orphans - from Indian Territory, where they had been living, virtually prisoners of war, since the close of the Nez Perce hostilities and their capture in 1877. Popular feeling in Idaho Territory unquestionably was decidedly opposed to their return. Rumors of threats and violence on the part of disaffected whites had come to the knowledge of the Interior Department. Several of the Nez Perce warriors were under indictment in Idaho Territory for the murders perpetrated in 1877. Anticipating there might be danger in their passage through Idaho, the Interior Department had requested that every precaution be taken to prevent difficulties between the white settlers and these Indians.

"They came into the department (Columbia) by the Union Pacific and Oregon Short Line Railways, and were met by Captain Frank D. Baldwin, Fifth Infantry, acting judge advocate, at Pocatello, and escorted thence by troops to Wallula Junction, on the Oregon Railway and Navigation Company's Railroad, where they were divided into two parties - one proceeding, under military escort, by rail and river, via Walla Walla and Lewiston, to the Lapwai Reservation, in Idaho, and the other, including Joseph, likewise escorted, by rail and wagons, via Spokane Falls to the Colville Reservation. Those members of the band moved to the Lapwai Agency, their former home, soon dispersed among their relatives and friends. They numbered one hundred and sixteen persons. The proportion of men, women and children is not shown by the records.

"First Lieutenant Daniel C. Pearson, Second Cavalry, under date of the 8th instant (Sept. 8, 1885) reports that "the condition of these Indians is satisfactory, peaceful, and creditable to all concerned. Upon their arrival in June last, thirty day's rations were supplied to them, and since none at all. They dispersed among their tribal friends on the third day after arriving, and have been living with them on their farms, and with them have been self-supporting since that time. The only rations to be supplied the returned Indians the coming winter will be for the benefit of about forty of their number who are old men and women and widows. Some have shown a disposition to visit the old Wallowa Valley, but were refused passes, and readily acquiesced in the view that it was not proper for them to do so. Their sojourn in the East changed them from a nomadic to a comparatively civilized people, whose respect for law and order is a marked characteristic, * * *. Several heads of families have already taken up land, and with presents of horses from friends are started as farmers, and will have the further help of the Government of wagons, harness, implements, and house material."

"That portion of the band immediately under Joseph - one hundred and fifty (forty-four men, seventy-four women, and thirty-two children) is temporarily encamped not far from Fort Spokane, and without property or money, was in a most destitute and pitiful condition. Had not the military authorities come to their relief they would have starved".

In another part of his report, General Gibbon advised that the Indian Department had failed to provide them with food and that this group were entirely dependent upon the scanty rations issued to them from Army supplies at a daily cost of \$23.59.

Major General John Pope, Commanding the Division of the Pacific, in forwarding General Gibbon's report, stated:

"The painful story of the return of the small band of Nez Perces from the Indian Territory to their old homes and reservation in Washington Territory is told with force and feeling, and should command the sympathy of the country and the active interposition of the Government. To abandon these poor Indians, without food and without implements even to shelter themselves from the severe winters incident to that climate, seems to me a most unhappy and most deplorable act, which should be remedied without delay, for the sake of humanity as well as because it is due to fair dealing and to the honor of the government.

"The military forces are now issuing food to them to a degree limited both as to quantity and character, but the military stores will not long suffice to protect them from starvation. The necessary tools and implements to shelter themselves or to raise crops it is not in the power of the Army to give them, and immediate action on the part of the Department of the Government charged with their care is demanded by every consideration of humanity and of right".

Major General O. O. Howard, who relieved General Pope in command of the Division of the Pacific, in his report for 1886, stated:

"The Nez Perces, including the returned "non-treaties" and the Indians of the Columbia region, are slowly improving their condition. The Nez Perces proper I consider the most intelligent and promising of our Indian tribes. General Gibbons recommends "that the sum of \$1,895.55, expended by the Subsistence Department in feeding the destitute Nez Perce Indians in the vicinity of Fort Spokane last fall, be recovered from the Indian Department. In this I concur".

In his annual report dated August 31, 1887, General Gibbon stated as follows:

"Ever since the location of Chief Joseph and a part of his tribe upon the Colville Reservation, his efforts and those of his people to establish themselves on farms and go to work to earn a subsistence have been persistently opposed by a portion of the Indians before located on that reservation. This opposition finally reached such a point that the authority of the Indian Department was obtained for the use of the military force to protect Chief Joseph and his people and compel the malcontents to acquiesce in the decision of the Government. Two companies of troops were sent from Fort Spokane in July last to enforce this decision, with instructions to give every protection to Chief Joseph and his people, to warn all others against any interference with them, and in case of disregard of the warning to promptly arrest the offenders and send them in irons to Fort Spokane. The mere presence of the military seems to have had the desired effect, and I trust there will be no further interference with the very earnest desire of Chief Joseph and his band to establish homes for themselves and earn a living".

In his report dated August 19, 1890, General Gibbon, then commanding both the Division at the Pacific and the Department of the Columbia, stated:

"The Indians in the department have been perfectly peaceful during the year and doubtless will remain so indefinitely, unless goaded to desperation by the constant encroachment of the whites and their acts of injustice.

"The good effects of the removal of the Indian "Skolaskin" from the Colville Reservation are marked, and the commanding officer of Fort Spokane reports that he has heard of no difficulties such as "Skolaskin" caused, since his arrest. As a disquieting element on the reservation, his removal was deemed essential to the welfare of the rest of the Indians, and it is recommended that he be not returned to his tribe so long as the present condition of affairs exists. There is no desire, however, to treat him with needless severity, and I suggest that he be allowed the freedom of Alcatraz Island and, if he desires it, that his wife and children be sent to join him".

CHAPTER III

THE WASHINGTON TERRITORIAL MILITIA IN THE BANNOCK INDIAN WAR, 1878

The following message signaled the beginning of the Bannock Indian War; was received by the Military Division of the Pacific on May 31, 1878 and forwarded to the General of the Army in Washington, D. C., the same date by General McDowell. The War Department acknowledged receipt and advised that General Phil Sheridan, commanding the Military Division of Missouri and General George Crook, commanding the Department of the Platte had been notified.

TELEGRAM

Portland, Oregon, May 30, 1878

Adjutant General, Mil Div, Pacific, San Francisco, Calif.

Commanding officer Collins, Fort Boise, telegraphs as follows:

"Bannock Indians have been making serious threats and ordering settlers off Big Camas Prairie. Man arrived from there this evening reports two settlers shot by Indians this morning. Both wounded; got to Dixie Station 60 miles distant; 90 miles to where Indians are camped between Big Camas and Snake in Lava Beds.

"Bannocks reported to have messengers out to chief of Piutes, vicinity of Malheur Agency. Numbers estimated 200 warriors, well armed and supplied with ammunition. Settlers have counted 60 lodges; 20 more, with Buffalo Horn, just joined them."

Collins telegraphs will start for scene of trouble with seventy-five men tonight or tomorrow morning, and requests order. As the ground lies between three geographical departments, and the Bannocks belong to General Crook, I submit the case at once for instructions. I will order Collins to work with caution and find if extensive outbreak is certain.

Am not sure enough of peace with Upper Columbia Indians to deplete troops in neighborhood just now. Harney, McDermitt, Hall and Bidwell are the nearest.

HOWARD, COMMANDING

TELEGRAM

Portland, Oregon, June 2, 1878

Following dispatch, dated today, just received from Patton, commanding Boise:

"Messenger arrived this morning from Captain Bernard, commanding Camas Prairie; writes as follows: Arrived Camas Prairie June 1st, where men were shot. Indians have taken herder's tent, contents, and horses, killing three of them. Indians are supposed to be encamped in a strong place, Lava Beds, seven miles from here.

The best estimate I can get there is about 300. To reach them, have to move over very rough country, so shall develop their condition carefully. Some think trouble done by young bucks; others think they mean war. Indians who are living in settlements have gone to Lava Beds. From letters sent me from Wood Creek, think the party committing depredations on overland road are Piutes and Umatillas returning to their country. Going west from Camas this party took King Hill Station, overland road, driving off stage stock, cutting up harness, etc. Men escaped and observed depredations from distance. Employed good scout, who says he can find whether Indians left Lava Beds or not. Will prospect, and, if gone, follow trail".

This is substance of Bernard's message. Another messenger, from Press reporter with Captain Collins, states that: "Buffalo Horn, evidently hostile, told Corder, friendly white, he had better leave with family, which he did. Twenty-five or 30 have joined Captain Collins. Boise Jim, of Camas Creek, on learning of approach of troops, left to join the Indians on Camas Prairie".

Thomas Silvey, messenger, brother of Silvey shot, and member of the camp first attacked, gives Patton details of first outbreak, which Patton has mailed. Silvey is a reliable man; believes attack was

premeditated. Stockmen had been warned for some time. Indians finally took treacherous means to kill three of them; succeeded in wounding two, one fatally. Squaw-man Dempsey writes Governor Brayman. Indians are acting in concert. Intend fighting if troops are sent. Later advices report threatened difficulty in Owyhee Valley. Indians, supposed to be Bannocks surrounded house in Jordan Valley; demanded of occupants guns and ammunition said they were looking for soldiers. This from Sheriff Hayes, Owyhee country, who fears trouble in that section. Later dispatch from Patton says: "Late advices by overland stage report two wagons captured and destroyed by Indians just beyond Glenn's Ferry. This is supposed to be party that attacked King Hill yesterday as they were then moving in that direction. They cut the ferry loose. Nothing heard of the teamsters. One of the wagons had considerable ammunition and powder; also revolvers".

HOWARD, COMMANDING

TELEGRAM

HQ. MILITARY DIVISION OF THE PACIFIC AND
DEPARTMENT OF CALIFORNIA, San, Fran Jun 1, 1878

TO THE GOVERNOR OF IDAHO, BOISE CITY:

Alarming reports have reached here about hostile attitude of Bannock Indians. So far as I can learn, this has been brought about by Indians firing on two whites whom they had ordered off the Big Camas Prairie. It would seem the Indians had looked on the whites as intruders and trespassers. Can you give me any light on the subject, and can you take measures to allay hostile feeling, to see if the questions can be met without an Indian War?

I have telegraphed to this effect to General Howard, and directed him to confer with you.

He is anxious about the Indians in Washington Territory, who have been uneasy and disposed to break out into hostilities.

MC DOWELL, MAJOR GENERAL

TELEGRAM

BOISE CITY, IDAHO TERR. JUNE 2, 1878

MAJOR GENERAL IRWIN MCDOWELL, COMMANDING, SAN FRAN, CAL.

The trouble grows out of the claims of the Indians to Big Camas Prairie. The present treaty rights I will explain by letter. In addition to the shooting two men, King Hill Station, overland road, was raided and horses taken. This indicates a settled purpose. The Sheriff of Owyhee telegraphs from Silver City that 150 are raiding on Jordan Valley Stage Road, without violence as yet, but threatening. I am enjoining caution, and have written Major Collins to avoid collision until inquiry. There is danger of general war.

M. BRAYMAN, GOVERNOR, IDAHO TERRITORY

TELEGRAM

PORTLAND, OREGON -June 3,1878

TO: ADJUTANT GENERAL, DIVISION, PACIFIC, SAN FRANCISCO

Report from citizens of Boise. "Indians raiding-Overland Road, seventy miles south of Captain Collin's camp, at Big Camas Prairie. Have destroyed King Hill Station, several ranch buildings, Glenn's Ferry, burned Eli and Watkin's freight wagons, stolen over one hundred horses. Indians on the war path surely. Families fleeing and fortifying." Edward Paine sends following: "Paine's Ferry, June 1. Five families came here for protection last night. Expect assistance from Boise City to hold this place. This is the stage-ferry, thirty miles above Glenn's, the only one left on the river. Heavy teams are on the road. Can get fifty men to hold place if we can arm them. They ask for order on Patton for fifteen (days) rations and supplies. They will start tomorrow if they get the supplies". They report further: "Twenty citizens of Rocky Bar, under Sheriff Campbell, joined Captain Bernard; twenty five more, under G. A. Parson, have joined Captain Collins". Governor Brayman sends similar information, adding the right to Big Camas Prairie is evidently the cause. Am not satisfied as to disposition of Buffalo Horn, I will continue concentrating at Boise adequate force unless otherwise directed.

HOWARD, COMMANDING

PORTLAND, OREGON June 4, 1878

TO: ADJUTANT GENERAL, DIVISION, PACIFIC, SAN FRANCISCO

Think Sanford with two companies will be enough from below. I have set in motion troops so as to have five hundred additional effectives in the field. Wheaton's district is untouched; ready for troubles in the Upper Columbia, if they arise. I meet Wheaton at Walla Walla the ninth instant, and then proceed to Boise, getting there in advance of marching troops. Grover goes thither at once, awaiting me at Boise.

Cannot your chief quartermaster induce telegraph company to reconnect with Walla Walla from Baker City. Gamble, general superintendent, told me the War Department desired it. This connection will help operations, particularly should Columbia Indians take advantage of Bannock outbreak.

HOWARD, COMMANDING

TELEGRAM

WASHINGTON, D. C., June 4, 1878

TO: GENERAL MC DOWELL, COMMANDING MIL DIV OF PACIFIC.

Your dispatches are all received. We depend on you to control active operations in Idaho. General Sheridan will do his best to strengthen Fort Hall and head of Bitter Root, as points of safety and supply, but for action his troops are mostly North of the Black Hills, East of the Rocky Mountains.

W. T. SHERMAN, GENERAL

TELEGRAM

PORTLAND, OREGON, June 4, 1878

TO: ADJUTANT GENERAL, DIVISION, PACIFIC, SAN FRANCISCO

Everything communicated from Boise confirmed by official reports just received from Bernard and Collins, with additional particulars that Lemhi Indians and others are involved, and that the numbers in the field are at least five hundred; that a man, and probably a woman, killed south of the Snake River. Several herds of horses captured, and evident purpose of Indians is to move westward. Have set in motion troops for quickest possible concentration.

HOWARD, COMMANDING

TELEGRAM

HEADQUARTERS MILITARY DIVISION, PACIFIC

San Francisco, June 6, 1878

TO: GENERAL W. T. SHERMAN, WASHINGTON, D. C.

The following dispatch received from General Crook, dated June 5th:

"Captain Bainbridge, commanding Fort Hall, reports on fourth instant that an Indian, arrived at the agency second instant from Buffalo Horn's camp, says Indians at Camas Prairie had done no wrong, that Buffalo Horn had but 10 lodges, and was coming to agency in two weeks. All quiet at agency and vicinity tonight".

I have telegraphed Howard, and Major Stanford, and Governor of Idaho to see if it is possible to communicate with the Indians at Camas Prairie and avoid hostilities.

Also asked Crook to instruct Captain Bainbridge to send some of the Fort Hall Indians to Camas Prairie, to say to them that we do not wish to make war upon them, if they have done no wrong, and urge them to come at once to the agency, to avoid the parties in Idaho who are seeking them for the attack made on the two white men in Camas Prairie.

MC DOWELL, MAJOR GENERAL, COMMANDING

TELEGRAM

BOISE CITY, IDAHO, June 6, 1878

MAJOR GENERAL MC DOWELL, COMMANDING, SAN FRAN, CALIF

On the 15th May Buffalo Horn gave me the same assurances as you mention, that after digging camas he would return with his followers to Fort Hall. I gave him permission to buy one hundred (100) cartridges and a little powder, to hunt during his stay. I have yet only rumor that he has changed his mind, but he appears to be hostile. Before I received your dispatch the troops were on Camas Prairie and the Indians beyond reach. It had become a purely military question. The time to approach them, except through the military authorities, appears to have gone by before I could reach them. When General Howard arrives something may be done in that direction, if possible, I will aid them to find the original of the difficulties and to settle it. The Associated Press have an unfaithful agent here, whose reports are unreliable and often mere invention. Several new depredations and a few murders are reported tonight."

M. BRAYMAN, GOVERNOR OF IDAHO

TELEGRAM

PORTLAND, OREGON, June 5th.

ADJUTANT GENERAL, DIVISION, PACIFIC, SAN FRANCISCO

Dispatch concerning Fort Hall received. Will take every precaution. The following from Captain Collins just received:

BIG BEND, SNAKE RIVER, JUNE 5TH

"Scouts sent yesterday to south of River returned; they went to Bruneau Valley, found the people fortified, much property destroyed. One man missing, supposed to be killed. Indians going South towards Juniper Mountains; they are believed to be Piutes and Bannocks. All stock about Bruneau Valley is taken by the Indians; they are reported to be from 150 to 200 warriors; the command will cross the river today, and will follow their trail. Have four day's rations on their horses, and will be cautious, and keep close to the Indians" I start to Boise City today to make arrangements about supplies.

HOWARD, COMMANDING

TELEGRAM

HEADQUARTERS MILITARY DIVISION PACIFIC

San Francisco, June 6, 1878

TO: GENERAL SHERMAN, WASHINGTON, D. C.

In the regiments which may participate in the Bannock campaign, one hundred and thirty two recruits are required. I ask that instead of sending raw recruits to these regiments while in the field that I be authorized to enlist not exceeding that number of Indian scouts from the Warm Springs or Nez Perces, if required.

The number of Indian scouts in this division has been reduced to one hundred, all of whom are in Arizona. General Howard has asked for twenty-five.

MC, DOWELL, COMMANDING

TELEGRAM

WASHINGTON, D. C., June 7, 1878

GENERAL MC DOWELL, SAN FRANCISCO, CALIF.

In present state of legislation we cannot authorize an increase of Indian scouts. You may transfer old soldiers from companies left behind, and fill their' places with recruits, or you may enlist Indians as soldiers, to take their place in the ranks subject to all the conditions of enlisted men. Guides may be hired as heretofore.

W. T. SHERMAN, GENERAL

TELEGRAM

PORTLAND, OREGON, June 9, 1878

TO: ASSISTANT ADJUTANT GENERAL, DEPT. OF CALIF., SAN FRAN

Following just received from Collins, Boise, dated today: "Just shown the following addressed to Governor Brayman: Yesterday afternoon Harper's company of volunteers came across about sixty Bannock Indians seven miles East of South Mountain, who attacked him; was compelled to retreat, Indians following seven miles, killing four white men and two Piute scouts, wounding Thomas Bones, also one man missing; several horses killed and wounded. Harper expects re-inforcements early this morning, then will return to scene and recover dead. Hills full of hostile Indians; need men and arms at once. Show to Major Collins". General Howard telegraphs following today from Walla Walla: "Reports from Wheaton represent some Bannocks appearing in neighborhood of Salmon River and people fleeing to Mount Idaho, reconnoitering parties have been drawn in. I expect to leave this afternoon for Boise after Wheaton comes here".

SLADEN, AIDE

TELEGRAM

BOISE CITY, IDAHO, June 12, 1878

ASSISTANT ADJUTANT GENERAL, MILITARY DIVISION, SAN FRANCISCO

Arrived here this morning. Sent force under Grover, including Sanford, to clear up scattering Indians toward Fort Hall. Please ask commanding officer Fort Hall to work towards Grover to detail the Bannock families reported going to Fort Hall, principally relations those on war-path. I am concentrating against Bannocks and Malheurs, near Sheep Ranch, six miles from Owyhee Ferry, on Winnemucca Road, taking charge of the column myself. Ten citizens and four friendly Indians altogether, from the first outbreak, killed. I think the Lemhi and the friendly Bannocks are working homeward. Buffalo Horn is leading the hostiles. Weisers, Piutes and Bannocks furnish the malcontents now raiding. Difficulty began by a drunken Indian; then Buffalo Horn said, as Captain Bainbridge would hold full tribe responsible, they might as well go to war at once, taking horses and other property. Should there be real breakout in Wheaton's district, please communicate both to him and me; to avoid delay. Shall probably need no more troops this way, so the five hundred reserve at San Francisco, in case of imperative need, could go to Wheaton. Governor Brayman authorizes Bainbridge to use his arms for citizens should necessity require.

HOWARD, COMMANDING

TELEGRAM

HEADQUARTERS MILITARY DIVISION PACIFIC

San Francisco, June 12, 1878

GENERAL HOWARD, BOISE CITY, IDAHO

Dispatch just received. No reserve of troops here. Egbert, with five companies of 12th Infantry, left Carlin yesterday enroute to Duck Valley, via Cornucopia, to which point there is telegraph communication. Egan, with two companies of Fourth Artillery, has just left for McDermitt, via Winnemucca, and will escort ordnance and subsistence to Boise. Three companies Eighth Infantry are enroute for Angel Island. Camp McDermitt and all troops enroute to you from here are under your orders. Your message sent to commanding officer, Fort Hall.

KELTON, A. A. G.

TELEGRAM

PORTLAND, OREGON, June 12, 1878

ADJUTANT GENERAL KELTON:

Following just received from General Howard:

BAKER CITY, June 11, 1878

"The Malheurs left their reservation 6th instant. Bannocks evidently working to junction with them, as I feared. Whipple and Bendire about a day's march from Boise. Sanford, unaccountably to me, less than one hundred miles from Kelton tonight. Stewart delayed two whole days for wagons, and was making short marches instead of long ones. At last accounts Cochran waited several days at Cayuse, and then, by my orders, started this way. Is near Meacham's tonight. Hope you have permission to repair telegraph line where broken between Union and Walla Walla. Warm Spring Scouts very important to help me hunt main camp of the Indians. Can you get them? Answer Boise. Grover will forward if necessary."

SLADEN, AIDE

TELEGRAM

BOISE CITY, IDAHO, June 12, 1878

ASSISTANT ADJUTANT GENERAL, DIVISION PACIFIC, SAN FRANCISCO

"May I accept services of volunteers for the emergency in any exposed quarters not exceeding one hundred. The Indians are raiding on a circuit of one hundred miles, and will need watching in different directions. Citizens offer their services some through Governor and some directly independent of his recognition"

HOWARD, COMMANDING

General McDowell forwarded the above immediately to the Secretary of War and received the following which was in turn telegraphed to General Howard:

WASHINGTON, D.C, June 14, 1878

MAJOR GENERAL I. MC DOWELL, SAN FRANCISCO

The Secretary replies there is no authority in law to accept services of volunteers. If the Governor organizes volunteers on his own responsibility, they may cooperate with the regular force, and in great emergency may be furnished supplies absolutely necessary. But no assurance can be given of military service by volunteers being recognized by the United States.

E. D. TOWNSEND, ADJUTANT GENERAL

TELEGRAM

Sheep Ranch, Oregon, June. 14, 1878

ASSISTANT AG, DIVISION PACIFIC, SAN FRANCISCO

Dispatch received. I arrived here at 2 A. M. today. Am glad so many troops are enroute. Downey, on account of disturbed condition at Malheur, returned to Harney without orders. This causes a readjustment of arrangements. Hostiles between me and Harney. Sent Sarah Winnemucca with two Piutes to bring in those merely frightened. This and overland routes now clear.

Grover instructed to see Fort Hall passes respected. Will suffice if commanding officer Fort Hall reports to Grover and communicates with him, unless: someone senior to Grover is sent, then would like him to report to me when he takes the field.

HOWARD, COMMANDING

EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT, IDAHO TERRITORY

Boise City, June 14, 1878

Major General I. McDowell, Commanding Division of the Pacific, San Fran.

Sir: Your early dispatches; as well as those of Brigadier General Howard, sought of me information as to the discontent of the Indians, referring to their claim to "Big Camas Prairie".

Yesterday, I responded to General Howard in writing, and, with his assent, inclose you direct a duplicate.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant

M. BRAYMAN, GOVERNOR OF IDAHO

EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT, IDAHO TERRITORY

Boise City, June 13, 1878

Brig Gen O. O. Howard, Commanding Department of the Columbia:

Sir: In reply to your inquiry as to the claim of the Bannocks to the "Big Camas Prairie" in Alturas County, I have the honor to refer to the treaty between the United States of America and the Eastern band of Shoshones and the Bannock tribe of Indians, concluded July 3, 1868, ratification advised February 16, 1869, found on page 931 of "Reversion, of Indian Treaties", published in 1873.

Article 2, page 933, provided that "It is agreed that whenever the Bannocks desire a reservation to be set apart for their use, or whenever the President of the United States shall deem it advisable for them to be put on a reservation, he shall cause a suitable one to be selected for them in their present country, which shall embrace reasonable portions of the "Port Neuf and Kansas Prairie" countries, and that when this reservation is declared, the United States shall secure to the Bannocks the same rights and privileges therein, and make the same and like expenditures therein for their benefit, except the agency-house and residence of agent, in proportion to their numbers as herein provided for the Shoshone reservation.

Article 6, last paragraph, page 935, provides that "The President may, at any time, order a survey of these reservations, and when so surveyed Congress shall provide for protecting the rights of the Indian settlers on these improvements, and may fix the character of the title held by each".

Very liberal provisions are made for the acquirement of homesteads, the protection of private rights, the establishment of schools, and the encouragement of agriculture.

It seems to be understood that "Kansas Prairie" is a misprint, there being no prairie of that name west of the mountains, and that "Camas Prairie" is meant.

The Indians understand it thus, and without exception or doubt insist that the "Big Camas Prairie" is theirs by that treaty. In proof of the sincerity of their belief, it is true that they have each year, during the season for digging for camas roots and hunting, resorted in great numbers to and occupied this tract of country. The camas root is to them the equivalent of our potato, and it grows spontaneously in vast quantities on these grounds. I have been visited by a great number of Indians who uniformly claim "Camas Prairie" as their "garden". They declare their rights by this treaty, whether the word be "Kansas" or "Camas".

These Indians state that the climate and soil at Fort Hall reservation are not adapted to the raising of vegetables, and say that the "Camas Prairie" is their garden, without which they would suffer hunger, for the dried and pulverized root of the camas is easily transported and is capable of preservation through all seasons. To lose "Camas Prairie" is considered by them the loss of their only sure and abundant supply of vegetable food. The increasing wants of our advancing population have for years invited increasing encroachments upon this prairie. Herders crowd upon it with thousands of cattle, destroying the product, and bands of "hogs" that dig up the roots, destroying not only the growing crop, but the seed of the future.

This process advances in proportions each year and the discontent and resentment of the Indians become more bitter and dangerous. Left to itself, this condition of things tends to collision and bloodshed, which, in savage casuistry, is war.

It does not appear that the President has as provided in the treaty stipulations, formally set apart Camas Prairie, to the use of these Indians, or directed its survey, nor that Congress has acted on the subject.

If it was the intention of the parties to the treaty to set apart Camas Prairie to the use of these Indian, as they claim, it lies with the President and Congress to carry that understanding into effect. If not, it should be so declared and early steps taken to advise all parties the right of the matter.

It is at this late day evidently better that the Indian claim, if recognized, should be extinguished in fair equivalent under a new arrangement, and the land in question surveyed and opened to settlement. Stock-raising, and the constant passing of the animals over the prairie to market, renders the exclusive use by the Indians impossible, and plants in the midst of, our growing settlements an ever-threatening

danger. During the long and unwise delay the conditions have changed, and if the national, authorities would, they cannot now in safety and with hope of peaceful results, confirm the Indian claims.

I respectfully furnish you these facts and suggestions for your present information in aid of such suggestions as it may be your duty to make to the superior authority, only adding an urgent appeal that the matter may be definitely and distinctly settled at an early day.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

M. BRAYMAN, GOVERNOR OF IDAHO

TELEGRAM

SHEEP RANCH, OREGON, June 15, 1878

ASSISTANT ADJUTANT GENERAL, DIVISION, PACIFIC

Your dispatch received. Sarah Winnemucca has just come in. Reports Piutes held as prisoners in hostile camp. She with a few escaped. From her and others information confirmatory, have modified plans. Enemy seems to be concentrated in large force in Stein's Mountains. Grover the center with Sanford, Bendire's, Sumner's and Carr's companies concentrates at once at Keeney's Ferry and move in direction of Stein's Mountains. Stewart, the right, pushing rapidly to Rinehart's Crossing; Malheur, Egbert reserve, ordered to move with utmost speed to Camp Lyons. Orders sent McGregor to move from Harney to join Bernard; Bernard with Whipple's, Bomus' and his own company moves tomorrow on Indian trail. I will go from here to Rinehart's Crossing to Malheur to meet Stewart. Egbert reports five companies, 130 men. Stewart's column, D and G, Fourth Artillery and B, D, G, H and I, Twenty-first Infantry, 13 officers and 200 men; Captain Cochran with his company F, Second Infantry, with Lieut. Drury will go to Camp Lyons to await Egbert. Will send only scouts towards Fort Hall.

HOWARD, COMMANDING

GENERAL FIELD ORDERS NO. 1

HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF THE COLUMBIA IN FIELD

Sheep Ranch, Winnemucca Road, Ore. June 16, 1878

I. The troops now enroute toward Boise City, Idaho by different roads will be temporarily organized for the campaign as follows:

Facing to the south and west from this point, toward the enemy, the column of foot troops under Major Joseph Stewart, Fourth Artillery, will form the right, and will be designated the right column. It will consist of D and G Cos, Fourth Artillery, and B, D, G, H and I companies, Twenty-first Infantry.

II. The column of cavalry under Captain Reuben F. Bernard, First Cavalry, will be designated the left column and will consist of A, F, G and L companies - First Cavalry.

III. The column under Colonel Cuvier Grover, First Cavalry, will be designated the center column, and will consist of Major George B. Sanford, First Cavalry and D, I and K, companies, First Cavalry and F Company, Second Infantry.

IV. The column under Captain Harry C. Egbert, Twelfth Infantry, will be designated the reserve column, and will consist of his present command - five companies - Twelfth Infantry.

V. The two companies of Fourth Artillery, under Captain John Egan, Fourth Artillery, now enroute from Winnemucca, Nevada to Camp McDermitt, Nevada will take station at that post.

VI. On Monday morning - the 16th instant, these columns will move forward toward the enemy now in the neighborhood of Stein's Mountains, Oregon. The right column from Old's Ferry, via Rinehart's Crossing. The center column from Boise City, via Keeney's Ferry. The left column from this place, via the shortest route across the country to the hostiles. The enemy is reported in large force. The columns will move with the usual military precautions to scout the country and avoid ambushes. They will attack the enemy only when assured of reasonable prospects of success, and will then assail with vigor. The columns will communicate by scouts and couriers as soon as near enough to each other to do so.

VII. The commanding officers of Fort Boise, Camp Harney and Camp McDermitt will employ scouts and scout outward, keeping themselves and the department commander well advised of all important information. They will furnish any necessary escorts. They will request the State and Territorial Governors to furnish volunteers when necessary, to guard ferries and important points near the homes of volunteers.

VIII. The Commanding Officer of Fort Boise will keep himself informed on all matters between his post and Fort Hall, Idaho, and will enforce respect to all passes furnished to Indians by the Commanding Officer, Fort Hall.

IX. Boise City is designated as the general field depot for supplies. Camp Lyons will be the sub-depot for the reserve and left columns, and Keeney's Ferry the sub-depot for the center and right columns.

X. Any Indian prisoners will be sent under guard to the nearest military post.

XI. Communication with these headquarters will be, for the present, by the way of Boise City; afterward by the way of the nearest point of transmittal.

XII. Headquarters will be habitually with the right column.

XIII. The general staff in the field will consist of:

Major Edwin C. Mason, Twenty-first Infantry, Actg Asst. Inspector General.

Captain Lawrence S. Babbitt, Ord. Dept., Engineer and Ordnance Officer.

Asst. Surgeon Jenkins A. Fitzgerald, USA, Chief Med. Off. in the Field.

First Lieut. Ebenezer W. Stone, Twenty-first Infantry, Chief Commissary of Subsistence, in the Field.

First Lieut. Melville C. Wilkinson, Third Infantry, Aid-de-Camp.

First Lieut. Fred H. E. Ebstein, Twenty-first Infantry, Regimental QM, Chief Quartermaster, in the Field.

Second Lieut. Charles E. S. Wood, Twenty-first Infantry, Aide-de-Camp, Assistant Adjutant General, in the Field.

XIV. Several tribes of the district of the Clearwater are represented among the hostiles, by renegades. The commanding officer of this district will, therefore, watch particularly toward the active operations in the field, and guard against the return of any parties, small or large. He will keep himself and the department commander thoroughly informed of the disposition of the several tribes in his district. (Col. Wheaton, District Commander)

BY COMMAND OF GENERAL HOWARD

CHARLES E. S. WOOD

Aide-de-Camp, Acting Assistant Adjutant General, in the Field

OFFICIAL:

J. A. SLADEN, AIDE-DE-CAMP

HEADQUARTERS DEPT. OF THE COLUMBIA IN THE FIELD

ASSISTANT ADJUTANT GENERAL (TELEGRAM)

June 19, 1878

HQ MIL DIV OF PACIFIC, SAN FRANCISCO

Bernard's report of the Indians leaving Stein's Mountains reached me at Keeney's Ferry this morning. I immediately ordered Grover with his three companies of cavalry and company or volunteers (Militia) to push for Old's Ferry and watch against hostiles going northward. No other substantial change of troops was needed. Bernard with three companies of cavalry and a howitzer, to be increased by McGregor when he nears Harney, is moving in direct pursuit along the trail. The hostiles threaten to go along the ridge from Stein's Mountains to Umatilla, but I think still they will aim toward Salmon River country.

HOWARD, COMMANDING

TELEGRAM FROM GENERAL MC DOWELL

GENERAL HOWARD:

June 20, 1878

General of the Army telegraphs that by abandoning the Lake frontier or the South, another regiment can be sent you if you think another regiment imperatively required to speedily end the present outbreak.

TELEGRAM FROM GENERAL HOWARD

Malheur, Oregon, June 21, 1878

GENERAL MC DOWELL:

An additional regiment is not needed, in my judgement, for this work, unless Columbia River renegades should begin war. Can tell better when I get nearer the enemy in Harney Valley, to which point I am moving my troops with the utmost speed.

TELEGRAM

PORTLAND, OREGON, June 23, 1878

ADJUTANT GENERAL, DIV OF PACIFIC, SAN FRAN

Following from Department Commander, dated between Malheur City and Agency, yesterday: "Wilkinson got to Harney alright. Bernard and command reached Harney yesterday noon and goes to re-inforce this A. M. Indians making westward, with large trail south of Malheur Lake. Stewart was at Indian agency this noon. Agency buildings not burned. Warn Klamath to scout easterly".

HOWARD, COMMANDING.

TELEGRAM

OTIS CREEK, OREGON, HARNEY ROAD

GENERAL MC DOWELL:

VIA BAKER CITY, ORE, June 24, 1878

My advance, under Bernard, overtook and attacked hostiles yesterday, Sunday morning, nine A. M. Surprised and charged camp; formed and re-charged. Enemy rallied. Bernard asks for reinforcements. Have pressed every man with utmost speed to his and enemy's position on Curry Creek, near Camp Curry, 45 miles from Harney.

Egbert will intercept stragglers eastward, and be in readiness for a rapid move in any direction. Nearest troops, at Harney, have been started, and I move from here at once to Bernard. Bernard reports verbally only one soldier killed at time messenger left. Bernard has four companies of cavalry, his own, Whipple's, McGregor's, and Perry's under Bomus. My aid, Lieutenant Wilkinson, with Sarah Winnemucca as guide, made a quick journey to Harney, arrives simultaneous with Bernard, and now returns with this report, having ridden 200 miles since they left me at Glenn's Ferry. Please notify Sladen, Aide, Portland, Oregon. Buffalo Horn was killed in the charge.

TELEGRAM

HEADQUARTERS, DEPARTMENT OF COLUMBIA

Portland, Oregon, June 28, 1878

ADJUTANT GENERAL, DIVISION PACIFIC, SAN FRANCISCO:

Following dispatch just received from department commander, dated Silver Lake, near Camp Curry, June 25th: "Hostiles increase as they advance. Beginning of outbreak, Bannocks formed junction with discontented, Indians north of them, then with Pah-Utes under Otis and Egan near Juniper Lake. Some Klamaths have joined them here. Some Umatillas have been endeavoring to form junction. Some have succeeded and are with them. General Howard is of the opinion hostiles intend to move north following Silver Creek, striking nearest route to South Fork, John Day River, then up Granite to Bridge's Creek, joining discontented Cayuses and other Indians as may be in that vicinity. To provide for this contingency, Grover will be sent at once to Walla Walla. The companies of cavalry in the district of the Clearwater and those ride under Major Sanford will constitute his command in the field - E, D, H, I and

M, First Cavalry, total two hundred and forty men-with such additions of artillery and infantry as the district commander may judge proper to assign. Major Sanford with D and I companies will halt near Malheur City and go into camp on Willow Creek till the probabilities of the Indians going north are determined. If hostiles move north, Sanford will move his command and join Grover. As Bendire is so near this point he will come forward at once with the infantry and artillery battalions now moving forward. General Howard for the present will remain with his column, consisting of four companies of cavalry, two of artillery and seven of infantry, total four hundred and eighty men, and will follow right after the enemy whichever way he may turn. You will keep General Howard informed as to affairs in your district or anything relating to the hostiles which may be ascertained by you. Should you lose communication with the general, the force at McDermitt should in the event of a northward movement pass to the railroad, thence by steamer to Wallula as fast as possible, with such increase in force as the division commander thinks proper. Possibly it may be best to call an Eastern regiment. It will be September before it could reach here, but it could reach you within two weeks; therefore it had better be sent to you. If you take the field yourself, Grover can command the cavalry, Merriam the infantry, and Miller the artillery. The Umatillas in Fox Valley are said to have sent their women and children to the reservation and threaten to join the hostiles. The general thinks it would be wise to have a point of observation on the Umatilla Reservation and there station Grover's force. It will be necessary to act promptly. The general arrived at this, Bernard's camp today at noon.

WOOD, AIDE

ABOVE SENT TO COLONEL WHEATON FOR ACTION.

TELEGRAM

HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF THE COLUMBIA IN THE FIELD

Mouth of South Fork John Day, July 2, 1878

KELTON, ADJUTANT GENERAL, SAN FRANCISCO

The hostiles crossed the river near this point on Sunday, June 30, and are now in Fox Valley; there they have been joined by the Umatillas who warned the people in country if they wished to save their lives. The indications are that the hostiles will cross the Snake River near mouth of Grand Ronde, keeping their journey under the cover of the woods of the Blue Mountains. They may, however, strike the Columbia between Celito and Umatilla if we are not fortunate enough to bring them to battle. The country over which we have marched from Camp Curry to this place is the most broken and rugged I have ever seen. General Wheaton, if any dispatches have reached him, has been ordered to be ready for the Indians as they emerge from the mountains into his district. Egbert will move toward Walla Walla from Boise so as to check and disposition of the hostiles to turn back. Citizens have skirmished with them. One citizen killed and several wounded. Impossible to re-enforce me from South, but Wheaton cannot have too much assistance and that very quickly, for the Indians are moving rapidly. Dispatches relative to subsistence stores received.

HOWARD , COMMANDING

TELEGRAM

FROM GENERAL MC DOWELL TO GENERAL SHERMAN

July 2, 1878

In view of Governor Chadwick's (Oregon) telegram sent you today, I have ordered the two companies Eighth Infantry just from Arizona to take passage on the steamer tomorrow to the Columbia. Shall wait to hear further from Howard or his troops before I bring back and send around by sea any of those now on the way from Winnemucca.

TELEGRAM

VANCOUVER, WASHINGTON, July 3, 1878

TO COLONEL KELTON, SAN FRANCISCO

Following dispatch just received from Wheaton:

HQ. DISTRICT OF THE CLEARWATER

Temporarily at Fort Walla Walla

July 3, 1878

Capt. J. A. Sladen, Vancouver, W. T.

"Referring to General Howard's instructions telegraphed me on the 28th, ultimo, I have to report that the movement northward anticipated by him has actually occurred. Agent Cornoyer informs me that the Umatilla Indians fought 400 hostile Snakes all day yesterday, killing 30 and losing 2, at a point 40 miles south of the Agency, about 80 miles from this point. This I received late last evening, with an earnest appeal from the citizens of Pendleton, near the Agency, for military protection. I had, an hour before receiving this intelligence, just moved all my available force here, 54 men with artillery, to Wallula to take boat and observe points on Columbia, near mouth of John Day's River, where it was supposed hostiles would attempt a crossing.

This little river-patrol command I immediately recalled, and they are now enroute to Pendleton, 42 miles distant. Operators at points on Columbia report unusual signal fires burning last night, and the women and children from Umatilla and Wallula are now coming here to Walla Walla for protection. A messenger who left Pendleton at 4 A. M. today reports people living six miles beyond Pendleton as having been driven from their homes by hostiles. It is exceedingly unfortunate I have no force with which to attack these 400 hostiles who are now devastating the country they pass through. We cannot tell yet whether they intend crossing the Snake River near its mouth enroute to the British line, or whether they will turn east toward Salmon River country. I would be glad to have any available troops sent to report here at earliest date. No communication with General Howard by courier to LaGrande and thence by telegraph to Malheur for several days. No communication with Portland all day, wire down.

"WHEATON"

TELEGRAM

Walla Walla, July 3, 1878

TO SLADE, AIDE, VANCOUVER;

I have just received the following by courier from LaGrande operator:

Baker City, June 30 - 9:30 PM

"Courier arrived from Camp Harney this evening; brought no news except that General Howard is supposed to be near South Fork of John Day's River. This tallies with report brought in by citizen courier, who rode from Canyon City to this place in twelve hours, using but one horse, arriving here this A. M., asking government aid for citizens of John Day's Valley. He states that fifteen citizen scouts attacked Indians, number unknown, on South Fork of John Day's River; were surrounded and still fighting. Also that Indians were pouring into John Day Valley. Soldiers, supposed to be General Howard's command, in pursuit".

FERREN, OPERATOR

I have already ordered all the cavalry in my district, three small companies, to this point without delay, but none of them are within several hundred miles of John Day River Valley. It is a cruel disappointment that I have no cooperating force available to meet and check these Indians General Howard is evidently driving.

"WHEATON"

TELEGRAM

FORT VANCOUVER, WASH. July 5, 1878

ADJUTANT GENERAL, DIVISION PACIFIC, SAN FRANCISCO:

Unofficial telegraphic reports say that Throckmorton's command had a fight, and been repulsed with some loss, though number of Indians killed exceed his own loss; that Connoyer, Indian Agent at Umatilla, is killed; that Indians are crossing the Columbia River four miles above Wallula. Another dispatch to this office from Bake Oven, fifty miles from Dalles, dated July 2, says Indians attacked party at place called Cummings, killed one, wounded two, burned the house, and took our State team, supposed to contain arms and ammunition for the State Militia. Settlers flocking to Canyon City and great fears of an outbreak on that place. Dispatch from Secretary to Governor of Oregon, says dispatch from Judge Elmer, Baker City, July 1st, stating Indians in John Day Valley, butchering and burning; fighting now twelve miles from Canyon City; urgent appeals for aid for that place, and asks in name of humanity for every man, gun and caliber fifty cartridges that can be spared from Baker City; that expected guns for Canyon City have been interrupted on the way; that they are almost helpless, having no more than 10 rounds for their needle guns; Judge Elmer raising a company; thinks he can raise forty men. Wheaton asks for more soldiers. There are none to send him. If special steamer already telegraphed for can be obtained, Captain Kress, who volunteers for the duty, will start this evening with ten ordnance soldiers and ten men from Vancouver, howitzer, and Gatling Gun to patrol river on steamboat in vicinity of Wallula, and prevent hostiles from crossing. They can be at Wallula by Sunday morning; possibly sooner.

SLADEN, AIDE-D-CAMP

TELEGRAM

FROM KELTON, DIVISION OF PACIFIC

July 5, 1878

TO: COMMANDING OFFICER, CAMP MCDERMITT, NEVADA

By reports from General Howard and Colonel Wheaton, the hostiles are moving north towards Pendleton, Oregon, and troops are urgently asked for on the Columbia River. Under these circumstances, Egan's and Smith's companies of artillery, and Thompson's and Well's infantry companies, will, without delay, and by forced marches, come to Winnemucca, thence to San Francisco by special train, where a steamer will be in readiness to take them to the Columbia River. If there is not transportation at McDermitt for their ammunition, that which is telegraphed for will be in readiness here. Hasbrouck's and Wagner's companies will remain at McDermitt. Answer when companies will leave, and what they will require here.

KELTON, ASSISTANT ADJUTANT GENERAL

TELEGRAM

FROM CAPTAIN HASBROUCK, Camp McDermitt to COL KELTON, San Francisco, July 5, 1878

Egan's, Smith's and Well's companies will leave tomorrow morning, taking with them the men. Thompson's company now here. There are thirty-two men guarding the road from here to Boise of Egan's, Smith's and Thompson's companies; they will be relieved as soon as possible and sent forward with Thompson and Von Schrader. All necessary transportation here. Fifteen thousand rounds of ammunition wanted at San Francisco to meet command. Egan's command will be in Winnemucca the afternoon of the 8th of July.

HASBROUCK, CAPTAIN, ARTILLERY, COMMANDING

TELEGRAM

PORTLAND, OREGON, July 7, 1878

TO: ADJUTANT GENERAL, DIVISION PACIFIC:

Governor Chadwick telegraphs from Umatilla, dated today:

"Two scouts from General Howard, who was twenty miles from Camas Prairie, yesterday morning and moving on. Throckmorton's command is also near Camas Prairie, where Indians are reported in force, scouts say about one thousand, Mason, Inspector, says trail indicates 1200 horses".

Another dispatch from the Governor as follows:

"Volunteers under Captain Sperry were defeated at Willow Springs, thirty miles south of Pendleton, yesterday. Captain Sperry and nearly all his command killed or wounded. We can hear of but seven left. Am trying to remove large number of families to place of safety down the river. Indians still sixty miles from this point to the south."

Captain Worth's command will be first sent above Wallula to seize large number of canoes and boats held by Homily's band, which is encamped on Columbia near mouth of Snake. Citizens of Portland have organized a company to start tomorrow to report to Wheaton, taking guns of Militia. They make requisition for caliber fifty ammunition. As I am temporarily in charge of arsenal during Kress' absence, I will issue, if not ordered otherwise, there being little or none of that caliber in the field. Wheaton anxious for those men to guard important points on river, including Celito, where clothing and subsistence have been sent for General Howard's command.

SLADE, AIDE-DE-CAMP

TELEGRAM

July 8, 1878

FROM COLONEL KELTON TO COLONEL WHEATON:

The Division Commander wishes to know if you have done or can do anything to prevent "Moses" and his people, and the bands affiliated with him, from joining the hostiles in case they cross the Columbia.

TELEGRAM

July 8, 1878

FROM COLONEL WHEATON TO COLONEL KELTON:

Dispatch of this date received. I have done all in my power to prevent Moses from permitting his people and Smohalla's from leaving their hunting and fishing grounds during the present campaign and joining hostile bands. Today, I received and sent to General Howard a very handsome letter from Moses, reiterating his previous promises to remain peaceful, and do what is right. He said last summer, and again this spring, that if he is let alone he will keep his people quiet. Parties who have seen Moses within thirty days tell me he is perfectly well disposed. Whether under temptation he could restrain his five or six hundred well-armed Indians, with plenty of ammunition, is considered very doubtful. He could, if he desired to do so, control Smohalla's and other Columbia and Spokane bands, and within forty-eight hours move with one thousand well-armed and well-mounted warriors.

I have, at my nearest, post to him, a garrison consisting of one entire company of my regiment, thirty four enlisted men and three commissioned officers. Two boats are now, and tonight I hope to have three, well manned and armed with artillery, patrolling the Columbia, to impede and delay, if they cannot entirely prevent, the crossing north of the hostiles, General Howard is pursuing.

"WHEATON"

TELEGRAM

July 8, 1878

FROM GENERAL MCDOWELL TO GENERAL SHERMAN:

Following dispatch just received from Lieutenant Sladen, aid-de-camp, dated Fort Vancouver: "Dispatch from Kress, dated Umatilla today, says: Left here at 2 A. M. for Long Island. Thirteen miles below a party of hostile Indians passed from left to right bank of Columbia River after we had passed that point at daybreak. They had about five hundred horses, three hundred of which crossed, and about

twenty Indians. Think the party numbered forty or fifty. Captured and destroyed entire camp outfit, property, canoes, etc. Came up for rations; will return at once. Major Worth's command left at 6 A. M. this morning". I have had Egan's and Smith's companies, Fourth Artillery, Thompson's, Twelfth Infantry, Well's Eighth Infantry, come by forced marches from Camp McDermitt to Winnemucca. They arrived at latter place last night; will come by rail today and leave by steamer tomorrow for the Columbia. Corliss' company, Eighth Infantry, just in from Camp McDowell, via Yuma, goes with them, all under Major Mizner, Eighth Infantry.

TELEGRAM

HEAD OF BIRCH CREEK, VIA WALLULA

July 9, 1878

ASSISTANT ADJUTANT GENERAL, DIVISION PACIFIC:

Yesterday at Pilot Rock I formed a junction with the troops Wheaton had ordered to meet me under Throckmorton. It being uncertain from conflicting reports whether the main body of the hostiles was near the head of Butter Creek or nearer the Columbia crossing, I sent two excellent scouts to place their camp, and at sunrise moved two columns, one under Throckmorton, consisting of two companies of artillery, one of infantry and a few volunteers, which proceeded by the stage road directly to Butter Creek Post Office; the other column, consisting of seven companies, First Cavalry as a battalion under Bernard, severally commanded by McGregor, Whipple, Bendire, Winters, Parnell, Ward and Bomus, with about twenty of Robbin's scouts and a Gatling gun. I accompanied Bernard's column. We had proceeded some three miles toward the headwaters of Butter Creek when we met the two scouts, who reported the Indians in a height about three miles from us.

Bernard, taking the trot, moved quickly into position over three troublesome foothills, the last of which is fenced by a canyon, and over a mile in ascent. The cavalry sped from hill to hill, till in the vicinity of the enemy strongly posted on the rocky crest. All the companies, except McGregor's with the pack train, were deployed and used during the engagement. The advance was made along several approaches in a handsome manner, not a man falling out of ranks. The different sides of the hill were steeper than Missionary Ridge, still the troops, though encountering a severe fire that emptied some saddles and killed many horses, did not waver, but skirmished to the very top, the enemy advancing his position and running to the next height in rear, slightly higher and specially crowned with natural defenses of lava rock. In twenty minutes height was charged from different sides and taken.

Then commenced a rapid pursuit of flying Indians, who abandoned their spare horses, ammunition, and camp materials. The hostiles struck for the thick pines which crest the blue ridge, and again made a stand, using the trees for defenses. Again the cavalry pressed them in front and on the flank, and in a few minutes dislodged them a third time and pushed them four or five miles farther in the mountains. The rough country and great exhaustion of horses and men caused a cessation of the pursuit, for today. In the battle five enlisted men were wounded, and probably twenty horses killed. The enemy's losses in killed and wounded is difficult to tell. Their women and children and best horses in drove were well out of the way before the battle began, seemingly toward the Grand Ronde. The flight is in that direction. Captain Bernard is entitled to special credit for this engagement, as indeed for the entire campaign, and his officers and men have done as well as brave and true men can do. Could you know the difficulties of this wilderness you would then appreciate their loyal service.

HOWARD, BRIG. GEN., COMMANDING

TELEGRAM

July 10, 1878

FROM GENERAL W. T. SHERMAN TO GENERAL MCDOWELL:

Your dispatches of yesterday are received and give great satisfaction. I should think that the fight described, led by the cavalry under Bernard, ought to give confidence to the people of that quarter. If the regular troops can drive the Indians from chosen positions, and break them up into smaller parties, the people of the country can help very materially in capturing them in detail. I understood 2,000 muskets

has been issued to the Territory of Idaho, and 1,000 to Oregon, whilst none have been applied for by Washington Territory. That Territory is entitled to 2,000 muskets. These it seems to me are enough for defensive purposes as well as offensive in aid of the regular troops. I am glad to see measures have been taken to prevent the hostile Indians getting north of the Columbia where their presence might draw in Moses and his 1,000 armed warriors. The Eighteenth Infantry is all ready, but will not be sent till absolutely called for. Colonel Nickerson, a most valuable officer, is ordered to General Howard as Adjutant General.

GENERAL FIELD ORDERS NO. 3
HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF THE COLUMBIA
In the Field, July 11, 1878

I. Captain Harry Egbert, Twelfth Infantry, will proceed with his command to Indian Valley and toward Payette Lakes, watching well against returning hostiles in that direction, operating from Baker City as his depot of supplies.

II. Major George B. Sanford, First Cavalry, with his command will press to a junction with the column under Captain Evan Miles, Twenty-first Infantry, without stopping him, and will push forward on the Indian trail.

III. Captain R. F. Bernard, First Cavalry, will proceed with his command to Lewiston, Idaho, supplying himself enroute from Walla Walla. The column will be organized north of the Snake River, between Lapwai and Mount Idaho, and will be commanded by the senior officer until arrival of the general commanding.

The column will go out with whatever force, and watch well all trails between Salmon and Snake Rivers.

IV. Headquarters will proceed to Lewiston via Walla Walla.

BY COMMAND OF GENERAL HOWARD:

C. E. S. WOOD
Aide-de-camp, and Asst. Adj Gen.

TELEGRAM Fort Vancouver, Wash., July 12, 1878

FROM SLADEN, AIDE DE CAMP TO ASSISTANT ADJUTANT GENERAL, DIVISION PACIFIC:
Following just received from Wallula, dated today:

"Hostiles after Monday's battle turned north and eastward along the Blue Ridge, crossed Meacham's road in the night; Sanford's three companies of cavalry and Mile's infantry is to follow. Egbert operates from Baker City, guarding against returns by trails between him and Piute Lakes. Bernard's, now Forsyth's, moves with six companies cavalry northward towards Lewiston. I am enroute to Lapwai, Mount Idaho, and vicinity with infantry force to head the enemy at the Snake crossing. Throckmorton is near Pendleton, and will be strengthened by Mizner's companies (8th Infantry) to quiet an excited populace. Attempts to cross the Columbia by hostiles have ceased.

EXTRACT FROM GENERAL HOWARD'S REPORT
July 11, 1878

* * * * *

Not being able, after many trials, to make telegraphic connection, we ride rapidly to Weston. Here Governor Chadwick, of Oregon, and Governor Ferry, of Washington Territory, pay me a visit, and I lay before them my proposed plans for clearing this part of the country of Indians.

* * * * *

As a result of the foregoing conference, Governor's Chadwick and Ferry were instrumental in forming a Volunteer Militia Company composed equally of Oregon and Washington citizens.

W. C. Painter of Walla Walla was elected. Captain; Dr. J. M. Boyd, First Lieutenant; and Frank B. Morse, Second Lieutenant. The 96 men comprising the company were from Walla Walla, Pendleton and Pilot Rock. The company was organized at Walla Walla on July 14th and was disbanded on August 26, 1878. The primary mission of the company was to prevent the hostiles from crossing the Columbia. About one-half of the company was detailed on the Steamboat "Spokane", patrolling the Columbia. Captain Painter for his efficient leadership was shortly afterward appointed Lieutenant Colonel Aide-de-Camp to Governor Ferry.

The following is a complete roster of the Company:

Wm. Attabury	James David	Frank B. Morse	J. N. Reynolds
J. C. Alexander	W. S. Donaldson	C. P. McCartney	E. G. Roberts
George Anderson	R. S. Dunne	J. C. Murray	M. H. Shawsun
M. Ayling	E. C. Dunne	D. McConnell	E. Sholl
Dr. J. M. Boyd	James Ferris	Hugh McIntosh	John Stevens
George W. Bochul	J. Grant	C. J. McClafin	William Stewart
J. Burlingame	Bill Henert	A. Myers	A. P. Sharpstein
John Bymaster	S. J. Hansey	M. McCarthy	A. Sholl
Wm. H. Black	N. Hardesty	George Meeko	John Snodgrass
Bud Chapman	James Harrington	L. Moulton	E. Stilwell
S. G. Cline	J. T. Hare	Lee Mitohelf	A. Shanklin
W. S. Clark	E. S. Harkness	Hugh McLaughlin	D. E. Smith
T. G. Cline	J. E. Henderson	J. A. McClure	R. R. Sutliff
D. J. Coleman	J. J. Hanlein	Thomas Madden	George Safford
J. M. Clanton	A. Higgins	Solon Moffitt	George F. Tocks
Adam Crossman	Thomas Hall	John F. McLean,	William Tillard
Jeremiah Clements	Edward Johnson	David Weller	F. Trullinger
D. C. Cronan	John Kirk	Wm. C. Painter	M. B. Thrasher
Alfred Cook	L. Knoutten	C. A. Packwood	R. Taylor
Oliver Diller	Edward Locke	E. C. Price	A. Wengler
John Deere	Dr. Locke	Chas. W. Phillips	Charles Wormer
Edward Doyle	Chas. D. Laughlin	George Ridenour	Daniel Webber
J. H. Drinkwater	F. Lee	A. C. Russell	Charles Wilber
David Dunne	H. Limpnuter	J. Rinehart	Charles F. Warnicke

TELEGRAM

July 14, 1878

FROM SLADEN, AIDE TO ASST ADJ GEN, DIVISION PACIFIC:

Following just received, dated Walla Walla today:

"Learning that there was signs of Indians moving on the VanSycle Canyon Road to Wallula, yesterday, at 2:15 P. M. I ordered the cavalry column enroute to Lewiston, under Forsyth, to turn back and go quietly to Wallula to head off any movements of hostiles in that direction. Reports reached me unofficially, at 6 P. M. that troops were fighting near Cayuse Station. I sent couriers to overtake Forsyth and turn him to his left toward Pendleton to Mile's aid. I also at the same time sent courier to Sanford, ninety miles away, to push to Cayuse Station, some fifty miles from him. In absence of commanding general, who is probably in or near Lewiston today, I start at once to assume general direction of the three columns until further orders."

"WHEATON "

Also following, from one of General Howard's staff, dated Pendleton, yesterday:

"Miles struck the enemy at Umatilla agency this A. M. After stubborn fight of several hours, the entire command, including Bendire's company, cavalry, charged the enemy, driving them in confusion several miles. Our wounded 2; none killed. Enemy's loss, 5 killed and a large number wounded".

TELEGRAM

July 16, 1878

FROM SLADEN, AIDE, TO ASST ADJ GEN, DIVISION PACIFIC:

Following received from Wheaton, dated Umatilla Agency, six miles from Pendleton, dated yesterday:

"Hostiles reported to be moving from their position near head of McKay's Creek. I had expected to attack them early tomorrow morning, when Sanford would be in vicinity of Meacham's. I sent Forsyth with cavalry column in quick pursuit and follow him with Mile's column. McBean, Umatilla interpreter, with Umatilla scouts accompanies the troops. Forty-six Umatilla scouts are now fighting Bannock's raiding party, and Snake Chief Egan, is reported to be killed. Headmen here believe he is dead. I do not doubt the authenticity of the report".

TELEGRAM

July 19, 1878

FROM SLADEN, AIDE, TO ASST ADJ GEN, DIVISION PACIFIC:

Following condensed from telegram received last night, dated camp near Meacham's, on Blue Mountains, 12 midnite, July 16th: Situation tonight is as follows: The movement Sanford's cavalry and Nez Perce Scouts to this point from LaGrande, while main columns were advancing from the north, evidently caused a panic among the hostiles. The trail from the hostiles - the trail from this point is strewn for six miles with large quantities of provisions and, to them, valuable supplies. They had not time to gather and run off their many ponies scattered throughout the country. At my request, ninety-seven Umatillas came this morning to help whip the Bannocks and Snakes. They brought in the head of Chief Egan for identification, and ten scalps. Sent them this evening, with three white scouts, to intercept the hostiles' trail eight miles southwest of us. They think two hostile trails end toward the head of Grand Ronde or Powder River, though they may join hostiles halt at head of McKay's Creek. Have ordered Forsyth's cavalry to follow Umatillas in morning. Will move Mile's Infantry and Artillery column south or west as direction hostiles may require. Egbert, now at LaGrande, will be held ready to go south to Powder River. Have sent Sanford to mouth Wolf Creek. Seven teamsters killed on this road during five days.

"WHEATON"

Also following received same time: LaGrande, July 18, at 5 P. M. yesterday: Forsyth's cavalry column reached Starkey's ranch, on Daley's road, following 93 Umatillas, who were in charge of three white scouts. At 1:15 this morning I learn by courier that at 2 P. M. yesterday the Umatillas struck the trail of the hostiles twenty miles beyond Starkey's ranch; direction of trail then toward head of Birch Creek. At 7 P. M., yesterday the hostiles were believed to be about twenty miles ahead of the Umatillas. I have ordered the cavalry column to follow them. At 11:20 this morning I received the following from Forsyth: He moved from Starkey's in evening leaving his pack train at Starkey's ranch, within two or two and a half miles, he found the Umatillas, and camped on hostile's trail; they had overtaken them at that point, charged them, killed seventeen bucks, captured twenty-five women and children, and sixty to seventy head of stock. Umatillas' only loss, two ponies. They report the hostiles are breaking up into small parties and getting off as fast as possible. Captured Piute squaws say the hostiles intended to try and make their way over into Weiser country, and thence to Bannock or Buffalo country. The death of Egan evidently demoralized them; they started to escape immediately after it occurred. Umatillas had their fight in vicinity of east fork of Birch Creek. Forsyth, with his cavalry moves on at 7, this morning. If the hostiles are breaking up into little bands as reported, and as is expected, it will be useless to start Mile's infantry column to follow cavalry. I may be able to so dispose of the foot troops as to prevent any

organized bands of hostiles moving with large herds toward the Weiser country. I will probably learn today whether, to hold Mile's column about here, guarding passes in this vicinity, or to move it farther south or southeast. The Umatillas have probably jaded their horses, and returned with their trophies to their reservation.

I will push Sanford, with his squadron and Nez Perce scouts, west to Granite Creek Pass, to cooperate with Forsyth and to intercept any bands of hostiles coming that way enroute to Weiser. I had ordered Sanford to mouth of Wolf Creek, where he now is. I will notify Egbert and Wagner of situation and supposed intention of hostiles to scatter into small parties and get back to Weiser country. I have guards at Cayuse, Meachem's and Pelican, and will escort mail-coaches from LaGrande to Umatilla agency until road is safe.

"WHEATON"

DEPARTMENT OF THE COLUMBIA, IN THE FIELD

July 26, 1878

GENERAL FIELD ORDERS NO. 5

I. Major John Green, First Cavalry, will, with his command, form junction at the Malheur Agency with the troops under the command of Lieutenant Colonel James W. Forsyth, First Cavalry, reporting upon his arrival to that officer.

II. The Malheur Indian Agency will be made a temporary sub-depot of at least twenty day's supplies for four hundred men.

III. Lieut. Col. James W. Forsyth, First Cavalry will upon arrival of Major John Green, form an active battalion of at least four companies of cavalry, which will be placed under the command of Major John Green, with orders to follow in constant pursuit of the hostile Indians on their principal trail.

IV. The remainder of the cavalry force will be held by Lieut. Col. Forsyth at the agency, operating throughout this country, picking up small parties of hostiles. All captives will be held prisoners of war, subject to the orders of the department commander.

V. If the hostile Indians make a stand on this side of the Owyhee River, Lieut. Col. Forsyth will put his whole command (excepting one company of cavalry, and one company of infantry, which will be left as permanent guard at the agency for the protection of the supplies and guarding of provisions) in support of advance battalion, reporting immediately to the department commander.

VI. After Lieut. Col. Forsyth is satisfied that the hostiles have crossed the Owyhee River he will move his main cavalry force and temporary depots to a point near Camp Lyons, ready to support the advance battalion still on the Indian trail.

VII. The garrison left at the agency (Malheur) will be reported by the senior officer to the district commander, Major Joseph Stewart, Fourth Artillery, Camp Harney.

VIII. In case the hostiles get still farther eastward, Lieut. Col. Forsyth will next change his main force to vicinity of Payne's Ferry, on Snake River, watching and supporting in the same manner his advance and pursuing battalion.

IX. The headquarters of the Department of the Columbia in the Field, will be located first at Malheur Agency, afterwards at Boise City, Idaho. The operations and movements under this order must be reported to these headquarters by courier or otherwise with the greatest promptness and dispatch.

X. Colonel Frank Wheaton, Second Infantry, will, with the remainder of the force, continue to operate along the stage-road, in conformity with the movements of Lieut. Col. Forsyth's, advance and pursuing battalion. He will see that one company is stationed at the Malheur Agency, as contemplated in paragraph V of this order.

XI. Prior to the hostiles crossing the Owyhee River, Baker City will be the principal depot of subsistence supplies, under the charge of Captain S. T. Cushing, commissary of subsistence. After the Indians have crossed the Owyhee, Capt. Cushing will move the principal depot to Boise City.

BY COMMAND OF BRIGADIER GENERAL HOWARD

EDWIN C. MASON

Major, Twenty-first Infantry, Acting Assistant Adj. General

HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF COLUMBIA IN FIELD, July 28, 1878
GENERAL FIELD ORDERS No. 6

General Field Orders No. 5, July 26, current series, from these headquarters, is modified as follows:

I. Major John Green, First Cavalry, being now too far to the left to execute his part of it, Lieut. Col. Forsyth, First Cavalry, will take his smaller battalion and one other and execute that which was assigned Major John Green, First Cavalry.

II. The department commander will move to the vicinity of Camp Lyons, Oregon, with the other battalion, leaving one company of it to report to Captain Marcus P. Miller, Fourth Artillery, who will remain, at this depot under special instructions.

III. Major John Green, First Cavalry, will, with his battalion, watch for a short time in his present neighborhood; and then move to form junction with department headquarters at or near Camp Lyons.

IV. Colonel Frank Wheaton, Second Infantry, will change his headquarters from Baker City, Oregon to Boise, Idaho, commanding all troops along the stage-road as now, holding himself in readiness to take the field should occasion demand it.

V. Colonel Wheaton will move the subsistence depot at Baker City to Boise as soon as it becomes certain that the hostiles have passed the Owyhee River.

BY COMMAND OF BRIGADIER GENERAL HOWARD:

C. E. S. WOOD

Aide-de-Camp - Asst. Adj. Gen. in the Field

TELEGRAM

ADJUTANT GENERAL, DIV. PACIFIC,
Presidio of San Francisco, Calif.

MALHEUR AGENCY, OREGON, JULY 28, 1878
(VIA BAKER CITY, OREGON JULY 29, 1878)

The crisis of the campaign has certainly passed. The check of the Columbia serves to keep the peace north of that river. The Bannocks and Piutes fleeing southward have not fully separated, but divided their trails and run over the roughest mountain country. I am moving my troops so as to pick the hostiles up in detail or drive them to the reservation, following any considerable number as fast as possible. Forsyth has eight companies of cavalry here and Green three near mouth of Weiser today. Crook has been telegraphed of eastward flight of the Indians, and asked to watch that they do not slip on reservation and escape arrest.

HOWARD, BRIGADIER GENERAL

In other telegrams and correspondence to the General, Commanding the Division of the Pacific at Presidio of San Francisco, General Howard informed all during August and September of small groups surrendering at the various Indian agencies. For the most part they dealt with the disposition of the Indians who did not surrender at their own agency. He recommended that those who had joined in the war be either shipped away to Indian Territory or to the Lummi Agency on Puget Sound.

During the foregoing campaign, settlers in the vicinity of Goldendale fled to that city for protection in the event the hostile Indians infiltrated north of the Columbia River. However, the trouble was over in two months and they were back again in their homes with but little loss. During this time, a company of mounted riflemen was organized with Enock W. Pike elected Captain. (Later was Colonel of Second Regiment, NGW) The Governor furnished the company rifles and ammunition and they were thoroughly drilled. This is reputed to be the first company of Militia organized under the Militia Laws of Washington Territory. (1863) They were known as the "Klickitat Rangers", but were never called into service as Captain Painter's company was.

In closing the curtain on the last major Indian Wars of the Northwest, it is felt that those loyal, courageous and outstanding individuals who played a major role in bringing them to a successful conclusion, should be perpetuated in the military history of Washington through the publication of their biographies. Accordingly, the biographies of these, not listed elsewhere in this or the preceding chapter, are as follows:

MILES, NELSON APPLETON. Born in Massachusetts, he entered the service as a First Lieut., 22nd Massachusetts Infantry on 9 Sep. 1861. He was appointed Lt. Col. 61st N. Y. Infantry on 31 May 1862; to Brigadier General, Volunteers on 12 May 1864; and to Major General, Volunteers on 21 Oct. 1865. He was breveted a Major General on 21 Oct. 1865 for highly meritorious and distinguished service throughout the Civil War and particularly for gallantry and valuable service in the battle of Reams Station, Virginia. He was honorably mustered out of the Volunteer service on 1 Sep 1866. Appointed a Colonel, 40th Infantry, US Army on 28 July 1866, he was transferred to the 5th US Infantry on 15 March 1869. He was promoted to Brig. Gen. on 15 Dec 1880 and to Major General on 5 April 1890. On 23 July 1892, he was awarded the MEDAL OF HONOR for distinguished gallantry in the battle of Chancellorsville, Virginia 3 May 1863, while holding with his command a line of abattis and rifle pits against a strong force of enemy until severely wounded while serving as Colonel, New York Volunteers, commanding the line of skirmishers in front of the 1st Division, Second Army Corps. He was promoted to Lieutenant General of the Army on 6 June 1900 and was retired on 8 August 1903. He commanded the Department of the Columbia at Fort Vancouver from August 2, 1881 to 1885 when he was relieved by Brigadier General John Gibbon.

GIBBON, JOHN. Born in New York he entered the US Military Academy from that state on 1 Sep 1842. He was breveted a 2nd Lieut. in the 3rd Artillery upon graduation from West Point on 1 July 1847 and appointed permanently in the 4th Artillery on 13 Sep 1847. Promoted to Captain on 2 Nov 1859, he was promoted to Brig. Gen and Maj Gen. of Volunteers on 2 May 1862 and 7 June 1864, respectively. Mustered out of the Volunteer Service on 15 Jan 1866 he was assigned to the 36th US Infantry on 28 July 1866 as a Colonel. Transferred to the 7th Infantry regiment on 15 Mar 1869 he served continuously with that regiment until promoted to Brig. Gen. on 10 July 1885. He was breveted during the Civil War for gallant and meritorious service in the battles of Antietam, Fredericksburg, Spottsylvania and Petersburg. He commanded the Department of the Columbia at Fort Vancouver from the fall of 1885 until his retirement on 20 April 1891.

WHEATON, FRANK. Born in Rhode Island, he entered the military service from that state as a 1st Lieut. in the 1st US Cavalry on 3 Mar 1855. He was promoted to Captain on 1 March 1861 and was transferred to the 4th Cavalry on 3 Aug 1861. He served from 10 July 1861 to 29 Nov 1865 with Rhode Island Volunteers, rising to the rank of Brigadier General for gallant and meritorious service in the battles of Wilderness, Cedar Creek, Opequan, Fisher's Hill and Middleton, Virginia. He was appointed a Lieut. Col. in the 39th Infantry on 28 July 1866 following his muster out of the Volunteer Service and to Colonel of the 2nd US Infantry on 15 Dec 1874. He was promoted to Brigadier General of the Army on 18 April 1892 and to Major General 2 Apr 1897. He Commanded the Department of Columbia from Jan 3, 1881 to 1 Aug 1881 and again for several months in 1884 during the temporary absence of General Miles. He retired on 8 May 1897.

SULLY, ALFRED. Born in Pennsylvania he entered the US Military Academy from that state on 1 Sep 1837 and was commissioned a Second Lieut. of the 2nd Infantry upon his graduation on 1 July 1841. He was promoted to Captain on 11 Mar 1847 and to Major of the 8th Infantry on 15 Mar 1862. He served with the Minnesota Volunteers during the civil war and rose to the brevet rank of Major General for gallant and meritorious service in the battles Fair Oaks and Malvern Hill, Va. Upon being mustered out of the Volunteer service on 30 April 1866 he was assigned to the 3rd Infantry in the grade of Lieut. Col. He was promoted to Colonel of the 21st Infantry Regiment on 10 Dec 1873, with which regiment he continued to serve until his death on 27 April 1879.

STURGIS, SAMUEL DAVIS. Born in Pennsylvania, he entered West Point from that state on 1 July 1842 and was appointed a Second Lieut. of the 2nd Dragoons on 1 July 1846 upon his graduation.

He was promoted to First Lieut. 15 July 1853 and to Major, 1st Cavalry on 3 May 1861. During the Civil War he rose to the brevet rank of Major General for gallant and meritorious service in the battles of Bull Run, Virginia, South Mountain, Maryland and Fredericksburg, Virginia. Upon discharge from the volunteer service he was assigned to the 6th US Cavalry on 27 October 1865. He was promoted to Colonel on 6 May 1869 and assigned to the 7th Cavalry, which regiment he served with until his retirement on 11 June 1886. He died in September 1889.

BERNARD, REUBEN FRANK. Born in Tennessee he served as a Private, Corporal, Sergeant and First Sergeant from 19 Feb 1855 to 14 Sep 1862. Appointed an Acting Second Lieut. in the First Cavalry on 5 Jan 1862 he was given a permanent appointment in that grade on 17 July 1862. He was promoted to First Lieut. on 21 Jun 1863 and to Captain on 28 July 1866. During the Civil War he was cited for gallantry at the battles of Todd's Tavern and Smithfield, Virginia for which he was breveted Major, Lieut. Col. and Colonel. He was promoted to Major in the 9th Cavalry on 22 July 1892 and retired on 14 October 1896. In the meantime he had been promoted to Brevet Brigadier General for gallant service against the Indians at Chiricahua Pass, Arizona on 20 October 1869; in action against the Indians near Silver River, Oregon 23 June 1878; and at Birch Creek, Oregon 8 July 1878.

PARNELL, WILLIAM RUSSELL. Born in Ireland, he entered the military service as a First Lieut. of the 4th New York Cavalry on 29 August 1861. He was promoted to Captain on 19 Dec 1862; Major on 25 May 1863; Lieut. Col. on 28 Jan 1864. He was appointed a Second Lieut. of the First Cavalry Regiment on 23 Feb 1866; and to First Lieut. on 15 October 1866. During the Civil War he won brevet promotions for heroic action in several engagements near Upperville, Virginia. On 26 Sep 1867 he was again breveted for conspicuous gallantry in charging a large body of Indians strongly fortified in the Infernal Caverns, Pitt River, California. He was awarded the MEDAL OF HONOR on 16 Sep 1897 for most distinguished gallantry in action at White Bird Canyon, Idaho on 17 June 1877 when he saved the life of a soldier. The troop, under his command, was retreating through this canyon, pursued by a largely superior force of Indians, and while crossing a marsh a Trooper's horse was killed and its rider left in the tule swamp. Lieutenant Parnell with a few men, returned, extricated the man and rescued him, in the face of very heavy fire and at imminent peril. The loss to Troop H, First Cavalry was 14 killed and one wounded out of 54 officers and men taken into the action.

In this same action MICHAEL MCCARTHY, First Sergeant of Troop H, First Cavalry was also awarded the MEDAL OF HONOR. Born in Newfoundland in 1847 he enlisted in the First Cavalry on 3 Nov 1865. He served continuously in this regiment being promoted to Corporal, Sergeant, Quartermaster Sergeant, First Sergeant and Regimental Quartermaster Sergeant. Following the Nez Perce war he did not reenlist and was discharged at Walla Walla where he settled. He served with Capt. Painter's Militia company in the Bannock campaign and was very prominent in the early organization of the Washington Territorial Militia in the Walla Walla area. He was elected First Lieut. of Company A, Walla Walla Artillery, Washington Territorial Militia on 18 May 1881 and to Captain in the same company on 1 Aug. 1881. In 1884 the designation of the Company was changed to Company A, Washington National Guard and he was re-elected Captain on 20 May 1884. On March 28, 1885 he was appointed Assistant Adjutant General with the rank of Captain and was promoted to Lieutenant Colonel on March 5, 1887, continuing his assignment as Assistant Adjutant General. In a reorganization in 1888 he resigned to accept an appointment as Captain of Company A, 2nd Regiment of the Washington National Guard, serving continuously until he was again appointed Lieut. Col. of the 2nd Regiment on 27 April 1891. On 22 December 1897 he was appointed Colonel and Quartermaster General of the Washington National Guard in which position he served until he was reappointed in the same grade to serve as Chief of Engineers, NGW. He retired on 16 October 1905. As far as can be ascertained, Colonel McCarthy is the only MEDAL OF HONOR winner to serve in the Washington National Guard.

BOUTELLE, FRAZIER AUGUSTUS. Born in New York in 1841 he entered the military service as Quartermaster Sergeant of Troop A, 5th New York Cavalry: on 4 Jun 1862. He was appointed Second Lieut. 5th NY Cavalry on 5 Nov 1862; First Lieut. on 2 April 1864; Captain 10 Jan 1865; and was honorably mustered out of Volunteer service on 10 Jan 1865. From 12 Feb 1866 to 12 Feb 1869 he

served as Private, Corporal, Sergeant and Sergeant Major in the First Cavalry Regiment. He was appointed Second Lieut., First Cavalry on 2 Jan 1869 and promoted to First Lieut. on 31 July 1873. He served as Regimental Adjutant from 25 May 1875 to 16 Oct. 1877. He was cited for gallantry in action against the Indians at Lost River, Oregon on 29 Nov 1872 and again for conspicuous gallantry and meritorious service during the whole Modoc Indian War. He was retired on 27 August 1895. He was appointed Adjutant General of the Washington National Guard by the Governor following his retirement and served in that capacity until 13 Jan 1897. Advanced on the Retired list to the grade of Colonel, he served as Recruiting Officer for the Army in Seattle for many years. He died in 1924 in Seattle.

Before concluding this Chapter on the last major Indian War in the Northwest, it is believed that your compiler make some attempt to differentiate between the meaning of the words "Volunteers" and "Militia" which are used frequently throughout this history and which if not clarified might leave the impression with the reader that these terms are synonymous. This can best be accomplished through use of some "Digests of Opinions" of the Judge Advocate General of the Army. In this manner it is also believed that some of the controversial statements made by past historians regarding "Volunteers" of the Indian Wars of the Northwest may be once and for all settled and the true status of Washington Territory participants therein determined.

The following opinions of the Judge Advocate General are quoted in connection therewith:

"1724. The President has no original authority over the militia by right of his office. He can only call them out when Congress provides for his doing so as the agent of the United States for such purpose. When the call is complied with, the militia becomes national militia, and he becomes their commander-in-chief. ***** December, 1891.

"1725. The calling forth of the militia into the U. S. service is an administrative function; a ministerial act, in which the Secretary of War may issue the necessary orders as the organ of the Executive; and his act is the act of the President. ***** August, 1893.

"1728. In 1836, an Indian agent in Indiana applied for assistance, in an emergency, to a militia Colonel who furnished three companies of his regiment, which were employed and rendered faithful service for seven days in assisting to execute the laws of the United States. Upon a claim now (1893) made for compensation for such service, HELD that the same could not be legally allowed by the Secretary of War, who could have no authority to recognize, as in the U. S. service, militia who had not been called out by the President or by his direction; and that such claim could be entertained by Congress alone. ***** July, 1893."

"1744. Many militia organizations have been paid by the United States under acts of Congress which provided for the payment of such only of the militia as served in Indian wars in response to calls from the President. Where money so appropriated has been paid to a particular militia organization, a decision was probably made by someone at the time that the organization was in the service of the United States; otherwise the payment would not have been made. Such payment is a strong indication of what the understanding of the Government authorities was at the time. If it is the only evidence that can be found as to what the understanding was and the records of the organization show nothing either way on the main question, i.e., whether the organization was in the service of the State or of the United States, it alone should be held sufficient to decide the matter. If, however, there is other evidence, the payment referred to should be considered with it in determining whether the organization was in fact in the service of the United States or of the State or Territory. These conclusions do not apply in the case of "volunteers" as the term is commonly used, but care should be taken not to treat a militia organization as volunteers because it bore the name of volunteers at the time. Organizations have some times borne the name volunteers when the facts and circumstances connected with their organization and service showed clearly that they were only State militia called into the service of the United States. *** May, 1894."

In view of the foregoing "opinions". It must be concluded by your compiler that:

a. The companies of the First Regiment of Washington Volunteers organized for United States service at Fort Steilacoom (Company B) and at Fort Vancouver (Company B) in 1855 by Acting Governor Mason at the request of Major Rains were not legally entitled to the status of "Volunteers", but were "Territorial Militia" mustered into the service of the United States. The balance of the First Regiment not called into U. S. service were "Territorial Militia" called into the service of Washington Territory.

b. The individuals comprising the companies of the Second Regiment, Washington "Volunteers" were not legally entitled to the status of "Volunteers" but were "Territorial Militia" ordered into the service of Washington Territory.

c. The Washington Territorial Militia serving during the Nez Perce War of 1877 and the Bannock Indian War of 1878, organized under Washington Territorial laws, and referred to as "Volunteers" were actually "Territorial Militia" mustered into United States service by General Howard as the authorized agent of the Secretary of War.

d. Neither Governor Stevens or Acting Governor Mason were authorized agents of the Secretary of War or the President for ordering "Militia" into the service of the United States, but, were duly authorized under the "Organic Act" creating Washington Territory, to order them into the service of the Territory.

CHAPTER IV

BEGINNING OF THE ORGANIZED MILITIA IN THE TERRITORY OF WASHINGTON

As of September 1, 1879, the following was the disposition of regular army troops in Washington

Territory and immediate vicinity:

POST	UNITS	COMMANDING OFFICER
Fort Canby	Company G, Fourth Artillery	Captain Arthur Morris
Fort Coeur d'Alene	Hq. & Band and Cos A, B, F and G, 2nd US Infantry:	Colonel Frank Wheaton
Fort Colville	Cos E and F, 21st US Infantry and Co H, 1st Cav.	Major G. G. Huntt
Fort Stevens	Company M, Fourth Artillery	Capt. C. B. Throckmorton
Fort Townsend	Co E and B, 21st Infantry	Col. Granville. O. Haller
Vancouver Arsenal	Detachment of Ordnance.	Capt. John A. Kress
Vancouver Barracks	Hq & Band and Cos C, D, G, and K, 21st US Infantry	Col. Henry A. Morrow
Vancouver Barracks	Hq & Staff, Columbia Dept.	Brig Gen O. O. Howard

Although there was no general outbreak by the Indians in the Northwest in 1879, considerable activity took place in the movement of the participants in the Bannock War who surrendered to Indian agencies or were captured. A band of John Day River Indians, under Chief Hiackeny, left their reservation and were eventually captured and all the headmen of the tribe incarcerated at Vancouver Barracks. Most of the Bannocks and Piutes were held under guard at Camp Harney. During the winter of 1879-80 some 600 prisoners from Camp Harney and Vancouver Barracks were transferred to the Yakima Indian reservation. During this same period Moses and his tribe continued to roam at will over eastern Washington. He was finally captured and held a prisoner at Yakima City and later at Fort Simcoe. The division of the Umatilla Indians which occurred during the Bannock campaign caused considerable friction on their reservation until finally their chiefs and Chief Moses were ordered brought to Washington, D. C. for a conference with the Interior Department. As a result of this conference, agreement was reached with Moses to settle his people on the Colville reservation, the boundaries of which were extended westward to the Methow River. Later this extension was interpreted to include Lake Chelan within the boundaries, where a camp was established to supervise the movement to the reservation.

In early May of 1879, Governor Ferry requested that General Howard with the necessary troops accompany him in locating the Moses Indians. The following is a report of General Howard on this expedition:

"In organizing the expedition I deemed it best to arrange an expedition which would serve three purposes; one, to relieve the community of anxiety; another to further the wishes of the Interior Department as expressed by Governor Ferry; and a third, to reconnoiter the whole country in the valley of the upper Columbia and contiguous thereto, with a view to securing some permanent protection to peaceably - disposed Indians and settlers by the location of a new post.

"In fact, a new post between the whites and the Indians appears to have been a part of the settlement itself, wherein Chief Moses agreed to give up his claims south and east of the Columbia, and move to the enlarged Colville reservation.

"On the 4th of May, 1879, Governor Ferry and myself started northward. The Umatilla chiefs went to their homes. Chief Moses and his nephew accompanied us as far as Priest's Rapids. Here we allowed him to visit his people near Moses' Lake, under promise to meet us on a certain day near the mouth of the Wenatchie River.

"For the expedition, Lieut. Col. Forsyth, First Cavalry, took Harris's and Bendire's companies from Fort Walla Walla, and proceeded via Priest's Rapids, to join the four companies already stationed at Camp Kittitass. The latter was under command of Major John Green, First Cavalry.

"During the absence of its officers, Lieut. Eltonhead has been commanding Captain Burton's company of the 21st Infantry. He was first assigned to guard the temporary depot at Priest's Rapids and open the new road across to the Kittitass camp. As soon as this work had been accomplished he moved his company to Kittitass.

"With Governor Ferry I visited Yakima City, where he explained the purposes of the Government, and succeeded in allaying the apprehensions of the people on the subject of their future protection. The murderers of the Perkin's family were already in jail, and warrants were out for Smohalla and some others supposed to be accessories after the fact. The indictment against Moses on the same charge was still pending. The majority of the people assured the Governor that the settlement proposed would be satisfactory to them, provided the troops were so located as to relieve them from constant danger.

"We proceeded to Kittitass and took the six companies of cavalry for the expedition, leaving Captain Jackson in charge of the camp, with a detail of cavalry and the company of infantry soon to arrive from Priest's Rapids.

"We reached Wenatchie on the 27th of May, in three marches from Kittitass. A range of mountains lies between, and had to be crossed by the way of Cook's Canyon. The first day out the trails were almost impassable, the pack-mules wallowing to their bellies in the mire. We encountered a fearful snow and hail storm, the snow continuing on the ground till the next day. After passing the mountains along the river valley, which is quite narrow, the weather became very warm, and the ground was dry and hard.

"Chief Moses and a large number of tribes of Indians, by their chiefs, as representative, met us at Miller's store, the only place inhabited near the mouth of the Wenatchie.

"The Governor and myself, at this point, held very satisfactory councils with the Indians, and everything proved so peaceful and satisfactory, that I concluded not to take the entire force any farther. I was more inclined to this from the conformation of the country. An enormous mass of jagged mountains rises up to obstruct the way, and juts down to the edge of the Columbia.

"There were old Indian trails over this range and out along the river, but recent earthquakes had broken up and destroyed them, so that we were forced to cross the Columbia at this point.

"We have never been able to so train our American horses that they will swim the rivers with willingness or ease. After much hard work, Col. Forsyth succeeded in crossing Harris's and Bendire's companies, with the necessary pack trains, while Major Green was instructed to remain a few days, reconnoiter the Wenatchie with a view to its claim for the new post, and then return with the four companies to resume command of the camp at Kittitass.

"We now proceeded up the Columbia, encamping for a short time in the vicinity of Chelan, so as to enable Governor Ferry and myself to cross over and take a look at the Indians and the lake in that vicinity.

"A remarkably peaceful old Indian Chief, En-e-mo-see-chi, resides here. He became a most friendly interpreter and guide for us after that.

"The lake is some 50 or 60 miles long, apparently not more than 3 miles broad at its widest. It stretches back among the mountains, leaving very little land sufficiently level for habitation along its shores. It emerges into the Columbia through the narrow inlet about a mile in length, with a flow of continuous rapids and occasional falls. The mountains environing the lake are thinly timbered. Some of the slopes, though very steep, are open and covered with grass.

"I omitted to say that we ascended the slope east of the Columbia, opposite Wenatchie, for 12 miles, and visited the place where Moses and his people were then encamped.

"What I have called a slope was ascended by Indian trails, for the most part very steep, and quite impracticable for making a wagon road.

"There was good water at Moses' camp, some pines and cottonwood, but timber very scarce.

"After ascending the slope, perhaps 6 miles from the river, the eye takes in the vast plains of the Columbia, a rolling prairie, covered at this season with the best of grazing. This is the character of the country generally in this region all along south or east of the Columbia.

"The 3rd of June we leave the river opposite Chelan, ascend to the high table land, and take a direct course to a point a little above the mouth of the Okanagon. Here Tenasket, Suksupkin, and several other Indian chiefs visit us; also some white men, who said that they lived upon the Colville reservation or its extension. I believe that all arrangements were finally satisfactory.

"This point I reconnoitered very thoroughly, going to the heights so as to view the whole country, crossing the Columbia and the Okanagon, and visiting the streams and lakelets in that neighborhood, all with the hope of finding some acceptable point for the new post. But south of the Columbia there is a scarcity of timber and water, and north of the Columbia neither timber or water is convenient; still, after examination, the best practicable site appeared to me to be south of the Columbia, at a point about fifteen miles southwest from the place which Moses had chosen for his new settlement. This will be on a creek, a tributary of the Columbia, named Kat-ah, near the Nespelum tribe of Indians.

"After a few day's delay, to acquaint ourselves with the Indians and their situations, we take our way, Moses and En-e-mo-see-chi accompanying us, over the same great plains that I have described to Spokane Falls, a distance of about 110 miles.

"When opposite the San Poels, this singular Indian tribe paid us a visit. They are solicitous of entire and absolute independence of white men and Indians. Their acting chief is a lame man, much given to dreaming. His dreams appeared to be sensible, and I anticipate no trouble from his people, for they are temperate and industrious. The substance of his dreaming appears to be the prayer of an aged Presbyterian divine, who formerly visited them.

"In passing over the grassy plains we found several small streams of water not on our maps. They will be found on Lieut. Knox's itinerary, but no woodland till we reached Crab Creek country, about half way. Settlers are coming in here. They increase in numbers towards Spokane Falls.

"Before reaching Hangman's Creek the country is quite settled up; the hills dotted with new dwellings, the fields plowed, and the children at school. The recent immigration has drifted northward through Moscow, Colfax, Crab Creek and Hangman's Creek. The hope of the establishment of the new post and the gathering in of the wandering Indians relieve the apprehensions of these numerous settlers.

"After inspecting Fort Coeur d'Alene, I returned to Spokane Falls, and was present at the Indian councils that were held there. The Spokanes beg that former promises be fulfilled. They say that Col. E. G. Watkins, Indian Inspector, promised them a strip of land along the Columbia and the Spokane Rivers. Some of the young men agreed to go with Moses, all in fact, except the old Chief Garry, provided the Colville reserve could be extended a little farther eastward, as promised by Watkins.

"The growling of Spokane Garry, who would agree to nothing, and the proviso of "Lot" and the other chiefs may yet cause trouble; but the Spokanes are not much inclined to war, however they may beg for supposed rights and the fulfillment of promises.

"After the close of this council, I returned June 24 by the way of Lapwai, sending Col. Forsyth with his escort back to Fort Walla Walla.

Although there were no new Indian outbreaks in 1880 and 1881, the condition of the troops of the regular army stationed in Washington Territory, after several years of constant campaigning, had reached a low degree of efficiency as well as a deterioration in morale. This can best be described through an extract from the annual report of Brigadier General Nelson A. Miles, commanding the Department of the Columbia:

* * * * *

"As far as practicable, I have inspected the posts of this department, and from personal observation am enabled to report the troops well instructed, well disciplined, and in fair condition.

"I find, however, that this military force has been inadequately supplied, as seen in the condition of barracks, quarters and transportation.

"The troops at several of the posts are not suitably or comfortably sheltered. This condition of affairs seriously affects both the health and efficiency of the command.

"I will forward complete estimates of what is required, and trust that a due proportion of the necessary funds and material appropriated may be furnished this department.

"In addition to the usual military duties, the troops have been engaged, and are now employed, in constructing military roads from Fort Colville to Spokane Falls; from Fort Colville to Camp Spokane; and from Coeur d'Alene east towards Fort Missoula. These routes, some 230 miles in extent, when completed, will not only greatly facilitate the movement of troops and supplies, but will be of great value to the public.

"The troops are also engaged in establishing military telegraph lines from Spokane Falls to Camp Spokane; from Ashland to Klamath Falls; and from Fort Townsend to Cape Flattery, adding some 240 miles to the lines of communications. At the same time the lines are being used for private and commercial purposes, thereby benefiting the citizens of the country.

"The troops, at available points, occupy a wide extent of country, the greater portion of which is inhabited by defenseless citizens and numerous tribes of Indians.

"The different Indian tribes in this department are, in the main, in a peaceful condition; most of the semi-civilized are making some progress toward self-support; yet there are vast tracts of country still occupied by nomadic bands of Indians, and between the latter and the remote settlers, conflicts of race may be expected. The evils arising from injudicious and illy-defined treaties made with these Indian tribes, are becoming apparent, and the constant clashing of interests between the Indians and the miners, ranchmen, and farmers, is almost inevitable, and quite likely to result in open hostilities.

"The germs of future Indian disturbances are already noticeable in some localities.

* * * * *

"It must be apparent to everyone familiar with the subject, that our little Army is defective in organization and, consequently, greatly overworked.

"This nation of 50,000,000 of people called upon its army for more than double the labor required of any other troops in the world, and the testimony of those who have had the means of knowing, from the humble frontier settler to the late Chief Magistrate, James A. Garfield, and in the words of the latter, is that the Army has been crippled and reduced "below the limit of efficiency and safety", and the people "expect Congress and the Executive to make the Army worthy of a great nation".

"By the present system we have a sufficient number of officers and non-commissioned officers, but there is a great necessity for an increase in the number of soldiers in the different companies.

"The "skeleton theory" has been found unwise, most expensive, and least effective.

"Our Army is required to be efficient in every kind of military duty, including skilled marksmanship. It must guard our coast defenses and boundary lines, public arsenals, stores and depots; it must protect the lives and property of citizens, scattered over vast territories; and in cases of necessity those living in the populous States.

"At the same time the troops are required to perform almost every kind of laborious work, constructing military posts, building roads and telegraph lines, also performing mechanical, clerical and difficult manual labor.

"This has a demoralizing influence upon the spirit of the troops, and causes desertion and other evils of the service.

"In case of emergency the skeleton companies are suddenly gathered up from distant points at great expense, and thrown into engagements illy prepared for such serious business, and expected to perform the work of well-organized and strong commands.

"With our present facilities for the government and accommodation of troops, companies of 100 men can be easily maintained, and in every sense better fitted for the service required of them. (average strength of companies assigned to the Department of the Columbia was about 43 at this time)

* * * * *

"I would also call attention to the fact of the number of officers who are permanently absent from their respective commands through no fault or neglect of theirs, men who have become infirm through long years of service, or crippled or permanently disabled in the various wars in which our Army has been engaged; also to the number of officers who have grown gray in the service and yet are occupying the subordinate grades of Captains, First and Second Lieutenants. These facts have a very discouraging influence upon a zealous and faithful body of public servants."

* * * * *

NELSON A. MILES

Brigadier General, USA, Commanding Department

During the Indian Wars of the past decade (1870-1880), with a Regular Army of approximately 25,000 officers and men, commanders had to rely on volunteers to augment their meager forces. This they did with some reluctance, rarely ever assigning any direct responsibility to the elected officers. As a result some ill feelings developed on the part of the regulars as well as the Volunteer militiaman. However, as this reliance on volunteers continued to be necessary, gradually a feeling of compatibility developed between the soldier and the militiaman. This trend no doubt stimulated by the increased growth of the Militia throughout the United States, resulted in official recognition in the highest echelons in the War Department. The following extracts from the Reports of the Secretary of War to the President in the early 1880s is indicative of this trend:

Adjutant General of the Army, Brigadier General R. C. Drum stated:

"Deeply impressed with the importance of the uniformed State Militias as the nurseries which in time of war furnish officers to organize and command the volunteer forces, I addressed in July last, a letter to the adjutant-generals of the States and Territories, indicating a warm desire to be of any service to the State and Territorial forces. My earnest wish is to still more assimilate the rules and forms governing both the regular army and the militia. It needs no special arguments to demonstrate the manifold advantages that would necessarily flow from perfect uniformity. Trained by the same manuals; using in the eternal economy of a company, regiment, or brigade the same forms for returns, requisitions, reports, etc.; governed in their annual encampments precisely in the same manner as a military camp in the presence of the enemy, almost every member of the State Guards would be qualified for a commission in the Volunteers. Under this plan, in actual need, 100,000 men, so officered, could be added to the regular army without jarring or confusing, and at the outset, would have the advantage of being "well in hand", the great desideratum of an army in active service. The responses of the State and Territorial adjutant-generals are so cordial, and express so much satisfaction at the steps taken, that I beg to inclose copies (marked B to Z). In furtherance of the views expressed above, I earnestly recommend that on application of the adjutant-generals, I be authorized to issue, in moderate quantities, such manuals, blanks and forms as may be indicated by them as desirable for the use of State troops, especially during summer encampment."

On November 15, 1883, Secretary of War Robert R. Lincoln (son of President Lincoln) in his report to the President and Congress stated:

"The report of the Adjutant General shows that in many of the States much attention is being given to the improvement of the Militia. As stated in my last annual report, officers of the army are sent, when, requested by the proper State authorities, to be present at Militia encampments to inspect the troops, and to give any assistance in making the encampments successful and profitable to those who take part in them so far as possible. Officers, were accordingly, sent during the last year to encampments in nine different states, and the reports of the inspecting officers, given in full by the Adjutant General, are interesting and instructive.

"I earnestly recommend that the attention of Congress be invited to the subject of giving substantial encouragement to the formation of volunteer militia organizations in every State, Territory, and in the District of Columbia, by liberal appropriations to supply the necessary arms, equipments, tents, ammunition, and other ordnance stores. With our small standing Army, our main dependence for

public defense must be in our Militia; and the wisdom of the comparatively small expenditures which would encourage their organization, and their efficiency in drill and discipline, seems apparent. In the last Congress a bill on this subject was reported from the Senate Committee on Military Affairs (S 1596), by which it is contemplated that in lieu of the annual sum of \$200,000 provided by the act of 23 April 1808, the sum of \$600,000 should be appropriated annually, the purpose for which it should be used being more extended than under the provisions of the old act. A careful consideration of this proposed act leads to the belief that its enactment would be of great public benefit, and I strongly recommend the passage of such a law".

* * * * *

In 1884, in his report to the Secretary of War, Lieutenant General Philip H. Sheridan, in commenting on his inspection of the First Division, National Guard of Pennsylvania, said:

* * * * *

"I take pleasure in certifying to the fine soldierly appearance presented by about 8,000 infantry, cavalry, and light artillery composing that division, encamped for a week on the battlefield of Gettysburg.

"I feel greatly interested in the National Guard of the States. In some of them it is placed upon a good footing, but for thorough organization and efficiency of this body of troops I think Congress should designate the number of men which each State should have and should provide for them arms and camp and garrison equipage under some wise method of accountability for this property, whenever the State governments themselves appropriate substantial sums of money for support of their respective military systems in such manner that these sums cannot be affected by party legislation. This is a restriction now guarding appropriations for the National Guard of Pennsylvania and that of a few other States".

* * * * *

In the preceding chapter, mention was made of the organization of a Militia Company at Goldendale. In addition to Captain Painter's Company raised partially in Walla Walla, another Company was formed thereat in July of 1878. This Company was known as the "Walla Walla Guards" and was composed of eighty members. J. H. Smith was elected Captain; T. J. Anders, First Lieutenant; and William Kohlhauff, Second Lieutenant. This company was armed with .45 caliber breech-loading rifles furnished by the Territory and were uniformed in gray with blue facings. The organization was apparently stimulated by newspaper accounts that more Indian troubles might erupt when action was taken by the Indian Department to place Chief Moses and his tribe on a reservation.

This same feeling also persisted at Dayton where, action was taken early in January, 1879, to organize a military company. A meeting was called by Mayor D. C. Guernsey at May's Hall over which he presided. Thirty five men signed up for the Company which was called "The Columbia Mounted Infantry". On 27 February 1879 another meeting was held to elect officers. George D. Gibson was elected Captain; E. R. Burke First Lieutenant; D. B. Kimball, Second Lieutenant; C. N. Clark, Orderly Sergeant; John Steer, First Duty Sergeant; G. E. Colgate, Second Sergeant; F. M. McCully, Third Sergeant; and F. P. Cartwright, Fourth Sergeant. Corporals elected were Thomas Graham, John Ellis, D. Bradley and W. Watson.

As the result of the passage of a joint resolution by the Congress on July 3, 1876 which provided for the issue of arms and accouterments to Territories for their protection against hostile Indians, Governor Ferry at the urging of the regular army officials, obtained some 2,000 outmoded arms evidenced by the following affidavit:

KNOW ALL MEN BY THESE PRESENTS:

I, Elisha P. Ferry, Governor of Washington Territory do hereby hold and bind the said Washington Territory, to the United States of America, in the final sum of sixty nine thousand five hundred and fifty two dollars (\$69,552.00) for the payment of which, will and truly be made, by said

Washington Territory to the United States; I do hereby hold and bind said Washington Territory, and the same is hereby held and bound, firmly by these presents.

Signed and sealed this eighth (8) day of July, 1879.

The condition of this obligation is such that whereas, by Joint Resolution of Congress approved July 3rd, 1876, "The Secretary of War is hereby authorized to cause to be issued to the Territories, and to the States bordering thereon, such arms as he may deem necessary for their protection, not to exceed one thousand to said States each, and not more than five hundred to each of said territories; Provided, that such issue shall be only from arms owned by the Government which have been superseded and no longer issued to the Army; Provided However; That said arms shall be issued only in the following manner, and upon the following conditions; namely, upon the requisition of the Governors of said States or Territories showing the absolute necessity of Arms for the protection of the Citizens and their property against Indian raids into said States and Territories, also that Militia Companies are regularly organized and under control of the Governors of said States and Territories to whom said arms are to be issued, and that said Governors shall give a good and sufficient bond for the return of said arms or payment for the same at such time as the Secretary of War may designate".

And that, whereas, by Joint Resolution of Congress approved March 3rd, 1877 "The Joint Resolution approved July 3rd, 1876 authorizing the Secretary of War to issue arms to the Territories and the States bordering thereon, be, and the same is hereby amended, by inserting, after the words "each of said territories" the words "and ammunition for the same, not to exceed fifty ball cartridges for each arms".

And that, whereas, by the act of Congress approved May 16, 1878 "That a Joint Resolution approved July 3rd, 1876 entitled "Joint Resolution authorizing the Secretary of War to issue arms" be amended as follows, by inserting in the fifth line after the word "States" and before the word "each", the words "and Territories" and by striking out after the word "each", in said fifth line, and before the word "provided" in the sixth line the words "and not more" than five hundred, to each of said Territories".

And that, whereas, by Joint Resolution of Congress approved June 7th, 1878 "The Secretary of War is hereby authorized to cause to be issued to each of the Territories of the United States (in addition to arms and ammunition, the issue of which has been heretofore provided for) such arms not to exceed one thousand in number, as he may deem necessary, and ammunition for the same, not to exceed fifty ball cartridges for each arm; Provided, that such issue shall be only in the following manner, and upon the following conditions, namely, upon the requisition of the Governors of said Territories, showing the absolute necessity for arms for the protection of Citizens and their property against hostile Indians within, or of Indian raids into said Territories; and Provided Further; That said Governor or Governors of said Territories to whom the said arms may be issued shall give good and sufficient bond or bonds for the return of said arms, or payment therefor, at such time as the Secretary of War may designate, as now provided by Law".

And whereas, the conditions prescribed in said Joint Resolution in regard to the requisition to be made for such arms, have been duly complied with by the said Governor of Washington Territory, and whereas, the Secretary of War has issued to said Washington Territory of Washington, from arms owned by the Government which have been superseded and no longer issued to the Army, the following arms, ammunition, screwdrivers and arms chests, to wit - Two hundred and sixty two (262) Springfield breech-loading Rifles Muskets, caliber fifty (50) model of 1868, with Bayonets, valued at Forty Seven hundred and Sixteen dollars (\$4,716.00) - seventeen hundred and thirty eight (1738) Springfield Breech-loading Rifled Muskets, caliber fifty (50) Model 1866, cleaned and repaired, with Bayonets, valued at Twenty Six thousand and Seventy dollars (\$26,070.00) - Two thousand screw-drivers, valued at Three hundred and Forty dollars (\$340.00) - One hundred Arm Chests (100), valued at Six hundred and Fifty dollars (\$650.00) and One hundred thousand (100,000) Musket ball cartridges, caliber fifty (50) valued at Three thousand dollars (\$3,000.00) - making a total valuation of thirty Four thousand Seven hundred and Seventy Six dollars (\$34,776.00) (Bond required was doubled)

Now therefore, the conditions of this obligation are such, that if the said Territory of Washington shall duly return all of said arms and other Ordnance stores named above, or make payment for the same, at such time as the Secretary of War may designate, then this obligation shall be void and of no effect; otherwise of full force and virtue.

(Signed) ELISHA P. FERRY

Governor of Washington Territory

IN PRESENCE OF:

(Signed) NATHAN S. PORTER, Auditor of Territory

(Signed) NICHOLAS H. OWINGS, Secretary of Territory

The foregoing apparently had the desired effect in fostering interest in the organized militia. On May 18, 1880, Battery A, Walla Walla Artillery was organized with twenty four members. L. F. Winnergerholz was elected Captain; C. E. Whitney, First Lieutenant and F. W. Schultz, Second Lieutenant. The strength of this unit was soon increased to fifty. Initially this company was equipped with regulation breech-loading muskets in which they were drilled. Although they had hoped to get field pieces, they never did.

Following the receipt of Territorial arms, an attempt was made to reorganize the company in Dayton. A meeting was held on November 20, 1880, but little was accomplished due to the meager attendance. At another meeting on November 27th, similar results delayed the reorganization. On December 11, 1880, with some fifty citizens responding to the call, the "Dayton Grays" were organized and elected the following: J. T. Burns, Captain; D. C. Guernsey, First Lieutenant; C. N. Clark, Second Lieutenant; and T. H. Dupuy, Orderly Sergeant. Others were: Elijah D. Miner, First Sergeant; Henry A. Pringle, Second Sergeant; Frank M. McCulley, Third Sergeant; John Carr, Fourth Sergeant; John M. Ellis, First Corporal; Delos Felt, Second Corporal; James A. Taylor, Third Corporal; Edgar Torrence, Fourth Corporal; and Privates M. Arment, J. C. Berry, H. H. Brown, Phillip Brown, Oscar Bunnell, Burdick Silas Greene, Isaac Caison, Dave Clark, Loren L. Day, Charles H. Day, Charles R. Dow, John C. Elder, John T. Ford, W. A. Frank, A. J. Frary, S. E. Frary, George D. Gibson, George Harmon, C. A. Hayden, Jr., Thomas Hulton, James L. Hull, J. M. Hunt, J. A. Kellogg, Albert Lacy, W. O. Matzgar, William Miller, S. C. Mustard, R. E. Peabody, H. P. Schriver, John Schmidt, James Smith, R. P. Steen, E. A. Taylor, F. J. Taylor, H. J. Torrence, William Thomas, B. M. Washburne, Simon Witkin, R.E. Wells, J. S. Winddell, W. A. Woodruff and G. W. Young. Others who joined subsequent to initial organization were Privates Arthur Rainwater, James M. Brown, Y. E. Phillips, Gustave Hoburg, Harry St. George, Charles Palmer, H. G. Murch, L. A. Davis, G. N. Matzgar, Charles Matzgar, Jesse L. Bailor, George F. Moyer, J. D. Maxwell, Jacob H. Hosler, J. L. Holland, John Hall, W. R. Parker, E. H. Murtz, J. R. Duncan, Lars Nillson and George B. Dorr.

The "Dayton Grays" did not receive their quota of arms and accoutrements until January 22, 1881. In the meantime a joint meeting of the "Dayton Grays", the "Grant Guards" and the "Walla Walla Field Artillery" was held at the Walla Walla armory and here was organized the First Regiment of the National Guard of Washington. H. E. Holmes of Walla Walla was elected Colonel and J. T. Burns of Dayton, Lieutenant Colonel. However, due to the lack of sufficient companies to form a regiment, as required by the Territorial Militia Laws, this regiment was never recognized by the Governor as legally constituted. As a result neither Holmes or Burns received commissions, although commissions were issued to the company officers.

At the General Election in 1878, Anthony Slorah of Seattle was elected Adjutant General; T. W. Sparling, Quartermaster General; D. W. Smith, Commissary General and John A. Smith of Walla Walla, Brigadier General. In 1880, Marshal R. Hatheway, who had served as a Quartermaster in the Indian Wars of 1855-56 at Vancouver, was elected Adjutant General. He served only a short time and the Governor appointed Mr. P. B. Johnson of Walla Walla to fill his unexpired term. R. J. O'Brien of Olympia was elected Quartermaster General; D. K. Bush, Commissary General, and J. W. Smith of Walla Walla re-elected Brigadier General.

During this period, interest developed in the organized Militia in the larger cities west of the Cascades, earliest of which appears to have been Tacoma. Bonney's history of Pierce County indicates that in the summer of 1881, a company was formed. George Bachman was elected Captain; W. J. Fife, First Lieutenant; and F. B. H. Wing Second Lieutenant. It was named the "Tacoma Rifles" and its first public appearance under arms was at the exercises held on the day of the funeral of President Garfield, September 26, 1881.

In 1882, it is of record that a Militia Company was organized at Olympia and was known as "The Capitol Guards". Quartermaster General O'Brien was its Captain. In 1884, this company was commanded by Captain John C. Ten Eyck with J. Frank Brown and Able B. Brown, his First and Second Lieutenants, respectively. Strength of this company was 35 non-commissioned officers and privates. As of March of 1884, five other companies had been recognized by the Governor and were the first formally recognized companies under the newly acquired name "Washington National Guard". Two companies were from Seattle, the "Seattle Rifles" and the "Queen City Guards". Captain Joseph Greene, First Lieutenant E. M. Carr and Second Lieutenant J. L. F. Kellogg officered the "Seattle Rifles" numbering 55 non-commissioned officers and privates. Captain John C. Haines, First Lieutenant J. H. McGraw and Second Lieutenant E. E. Hunt were the officers of the "Queen City Guards" comprising 86 non-commissioned officers and privates. The "Grant Guards" (formerly Walla Walla Guards) was under the command of Captain Paul De Heirry, with First Lieutenant Albert Weiser and Second Lieutenant C. E. Nye his company officers. Strength in non-commissioned officers and privates was 35. The other company was the "Klickitat County Guards" from Goldendale, with Captain Enock W. Pike, First Lieutenant A. L. Miller and Second Lieutenant G. W. Stapleton its officers. Its strength was given as 52. The roster of the Governor's Staff for 1884-85 was as follows:

- Watson C. Squire, Governor and Commander in Chief
- R. G. O'Brien, Brigadier General and Adjutant General
- D. B. Jackson, Port Gamble, Brigadier General and Quartermaster General
- H. W. Livingstone, Dayton, Brigadier General and Commissary General
- William Peel, Montesano, Brigadier General, Commanding Brigade
- Henry Landes, Port Townsend, Lt. Col., and Asst. Adj. Gen.
- Albert Whyte, Tacoma, Captain and Asst. Adj. Gen.
- Michael McCarthy, Walla Walla, Captain and Asst. Adj. Gen.
- F. F. Gilbert, Walla Walla, Captain and Asst. QM General
- Charles M. Holton, Yakima City, Lt. Col. and Aide-de-Camp
- J. G. Lyons, Seattle, Lt. Col. and Aide-de-Camp

In his Biennial Report for 1884-85, Adjutant General O'Brien, in his report to the Legislative Assembly, stated:

"The organization of the Militia of the territory is a duty fraught with much discouragement, by reason of lack of funds to carry out the simplest requirements of the law. The difficulties encountered in recruiting men to fill old and organize new companies is not from the lack of the proper military spirit, neither from the lack of willing men; but rather from the fact that while the present law requires that every able bodied man between certain ages shall be enrolled in the militia, it makes no provision whatever for defraying the expense necessary to such organization, much less its maintenance.

"No other state in the Union but makes ample provision for carrying their Militia laws into effect, and establishing the Militia on a firm basis.

"The necessity for the use of a well organized, well disciplined Militia, has passed beyond the field of argument, and is increasing as our territory develops its resources. Every reason that exists for its maintenance calls for the highest state of efficiency.

"The mission of the Militia is to be ready to discharge the duties imposed upon it under law; to protect the state; to answer the call of civil authorities, and to defend the nation at the call of the President and thus indeed, becoming a "National Guard ".

"The great armies of the Union in our country's hour of distress, were Militia; and it seems useless to mention, that to their valor, we today owe our present prosperous condition as a nation.

"I regret to say that the history of the part borne by the Volunteers from Washington Territory, in the great conflict for the preservation of the Union, so far as this office is advised, is unknown; the papers pertaining to them and that period, as I am informed having been forwarded to Washington City, and are now presumably, in the care of the War Department."

* * * * *

"To better establish the esprit de corps, and perfect the discipline of the companies already organized on Puget Sound, it was thought well to assemble them in a camp of instruction at a place near Olympia, on Chamber's Prairie, called "Five Oaks".

"There being no provision of law for meeting the expenses necessary to such an occasion and a General Order for their assembly being deemed impracticable, an invitation was extended to all the organized companies located on Puget Sound to participate in such encampment.

"Responsive to such invitation, on the 20th day of August 1885, the "Capitol Guards" at Olympia, Captain John C. Ten Eyck, commanding, joined by the "Seattle Rifles", First Lieut. E. M. Carr, commanding, in full marching order proceeded to "Five Oaks" and established a camp which I named "Camp Chambers", in honor of Mr. A. H. Chambers, who, at some inconvenience to himself, kindly granted the use of his grounds.

"To provide for this encampment it became necessary to procure tents for shelter and to supply this convenience, I endeavored to borrow from the garrison at Vancouver a sufficient number for our accommodation, but failed, as the tents of the government could not be loaned except by permission of congress. Having, however, received from Thurston County the sum of two hundred dollars, the proceeds of the sale of arms erroneously disposed of by orders of the commissioners, I deemed it to be the best interests of the service to expend "the same for the purchase of tents, which, with your permission, I did, purchasing 21 tents complete at a cost of \$303.50, exclusive of freight, advancing a sum sufficient to meet the expense over and above the \$200.

"On Tuesday, August 25th, the "Queen City Guards" of Seattle, Second Lieut. E. E. Hunt, commanding, joined us in camp and remained until the close of the encampment. It is much regretted that this company could not have received the benefit of the term of the encampment as they displayed an active interest in the duties devolving upon them. Quite a number of this command, however, renewed the experience of by-gone years, when to bear arms meant more than the mere routine of camp life.

"The subsistence for officers and men was a matter of individual provision, each one bearing his share of the expense. The provision in every respect was ample, the camp being supplied with the best the markets of Olympia afforded, at reduced rates.

"The transportation of the troops from Seattle and return at very much reduced rates, was accomplished through the courtesy of the "Puget Sound Transportation Company", Captain J. G. Parker, president and superintendent of the company, and through the kindness of Mr. G. H. Foster and Messrs Kirkendall and Littlejohn, proprietors of the livery stables of Olympia, the companies were enabled to get their baggage and themselves taken to the camp ground free of cost, and I take occasion to express to these gentlemen the fullest appreciation of their unstinted liberality.

"Much praise is due the officers and men of the several companies assembled for the manner in which they discharged the duties devolving upon them, especially to the officers who, being few in number, performed the service of five times their number, being constantly on duty from the time of entering till breaking camp.

"On the occasion of the first dress parade held on the evening of August 21st, the following order was published:

of a soldier. They accepted the situation however, in a soldierly manner and not only astonished their officers, but themselves at the rapid progress made from day to day.

"Considering the fact that this encampment was looked upon in the nature of an experiment, considerable interest was manifested as to the result and the benefit afforded the troops on duty, surpassed even what was held to be or reasonable expectation.

"On Tuesday, August 25th, pursuant to previous arrangements, took place, a grand review or all troops in camp, upon which occasion the Commander in Chief, accompanied by Major J. R. Hayden and John F. Gowey, Esq., as aides, inspected the command and expressed pleasure and satisfaction at the appearance of the troops and proficiency attained in drill. With the review closed the important exercises in the field and the encampment was pronounced a success, only equaled in brilliancy, profit and pleasure, by the reception given by his excellency in honor of the National Guards of Washington."

* * * * *

ROSSELL G. O'BRIEN, Adj. Gen.

General O'Brien was born in Ireland in 1846. He first entered the military service as a private in the Ellsworth Zouaves (Governor's Guard) of Chicago in 1862, serving until 28 April 1864 when he enlisted in Co. D, 134th Illinois Volunteer regiment. He was appointed 2nd Lieut. in this regiment on May 31, 1864 and served with this regiment in the Summer campaigns in Kentucky until Sept. 1864. He was then ordered to St. Louis with this regiment and served in the campaign against the rebel General Price in Missouri. He was honorably mustered out of the Volunteer service on October 25, 1864. He served as a First Lieut. of the Governor's Guards of Chicago from 1865 to 1870 when he came to Washington Territory with newly appointed Governor Edward S. Saloman. He was appointed Deputy Collector of Internal Revenue in 1871 and later served as Chief Clerk of the House of Representatives of the Legislative Assembly. He served on the City Council of Olympia from 1886 to 1888 and as Mayor in 1891. In the meantime he served as Clerk of the Supreme Court and as Quartermaster and Adjutant General of the Territorial Militia from 1880 to 1895 when he was placed on retired list. He is credited with being the "Father" of the National Guard in Washington.

During this period there was some unrestfulness on the part of the Indians but no serious outbreaks. The following extracts from Brigadier General Nelson A. Miles's report on the Department of the Columbia to the Secretary of War is of interest:

HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF THE COLUMBIA
Vancouver Barracks, Wash., October 2, 1884

Sir:

* * * * *

Within the past four months there has been a change of station of nearly all the troops in this department, the Twenty-first Infantry exchanging with the Fourteenth Infantry from the Department of the Platte, and the Troops of the First Cavalry with the Second Cavalry from the Department of Dakota.

Such changes, in my opinion, are highly beneficial to the health of the commands, and while increasing the esprit de corps and efficiency, enlarges their experience and observation in different sections of the country.

I would respectfully recommend, as far as the troops in this department are concerned, that in future they be changed at least once in every four years and that the distance be not so great as to prevent both infantry and cavalry marching between stations.

* * * * *

Forts Walla Walla, Spokane and Coeur d'Alene have been made the principal post of this department, where troops are stationed for immediate use in the sections of the country most liable to Indian hostility, while Vancouver Barracks serves all purposes for the station of a strong reserve force for the entire department. The latter post enjoys unusual facilities in this respect, owing to its near

proximity to the center of the system of railway and steamship communication of the Northwest - Portland, Oregon, which from its geographical location, from its railroad connection, and from its river and ocean service, renders all sections of the country easily accessible. The artillery stations (Forts Canby and Stevens), commanding the entrance to the Columbia River are well located and kept in good condition, as limited mean will admit.

"Fort Canby has a good armament and an effective garrison.

"Fort Stevens has a strong armament, but for some years has been without a sufficient garrison, and very deficient in the necessary appropriations needed to maintain it in proper condition for defense.

"I would especially invite attention to the defenseless condition of the entrance to Puget Sound. In addition to the very large commercial interests in that great harbor or inland sea, there are national interests requiring that this important district of country should receive the adequate protection of the General Government. Olympia, Tacoma, Seattle, Ports Ludlow, Madison, and Townsend, and the present terminus of the Northern Pacific Railroad on Puget Sound are places of great commercial interests. The Government has reserved important sites for batteries and defensive works at the entrance of Puget Sound; and the most valuable of these, in my opinion, should be occupied and put into proper condition for use. I have ordered a board of experienced artillery officers, after consulting with Captain Powell, Corps of Engineers, to examine these military reserves, and make special report as to their relative importance, and the proper armament, garrison, and work necessary to place them in proper condition for use. When received, this report will be forwarded for consideration of the division commander.

"The relations existing between the white population within the geographic limits of this military department and the various Indian tribes during the last year has been in the main peaceable and friendly. Not a single report has been received at these headquarters of any serious acts of hostility on the part of the Indians. Many complaints have been received from both whites and Indians of trespasses, trivial annoyances, and some acts of violence. The military have used every effort to prevent disturbances of the peace, and to avoid open hostilities, and they have met with good success.

"Within the last year the difficult and complicated questions concerning the Moses and Upper Columbia River Indians have been adjusted by an amicable and equitable settlement or treaty between these Indians and the Government, whereby the Indians surrender a valuable district of country, larger in area than several eastern States, and locate either in severalty or on the Colville Reservation.

"The agreement having been confirmed by Congress, I believe it will result most favorably to the Indians and white settlers in that vicinity and to the General Government.

"During the past winter, spring, and summer, many complaints have been received from the Lower Columbia River Indians, located between The Dalles and Priest's Rapids, and it has been with great difficulty that serious hostilities have been prevented. I have had officers and men engaged in pacifying these Indians who in the main seem well disposed, although by the rapid settlement of the country they have been unjustly deprived in many instances of their cultivated grounds, their salmon fisheries, and other means of subsistence. Numbers of those Indians have been assisted by the military in locating their claims to homesteads under the laws of Congress, and there is a fair prospect that the conflict of interests and hostile feeling between the two elements may soon be eliminated"

* * * * *

Disposition of regular army troops in the District of Columbia by station, commanding officers and strength in October 1884 was as follows:

POSTS	LOCATION	UNITS	COMMANDERS	STRENGTHS
Hq. Dept. of Col.	Vancouver Barracks	Dept. Staff	Gen. N. A. Miles	31
Boise Barracks	Near Boise City	2 Cos Inf & Cav	Maj. J. S. Brisbin	119
Fort Coeur d'Alene	11 mi fr Rathdrum	6 Cos, 2nd Inf	Col. F. Wheaton	313
Fort Canby	Mouth of Col.	2 Cos, 1st Arty	Maj. J. I. Rodgers	77

Fort Spokane	Near Spok. Falls	5 Cos, Inf & Cav	Lt. Col. H. C. Merriam	250
Fort Townsend	Near Pt. Townsend	2 Cos, 14th Inf	Lt. Col. Henry Douglas	104
Fort Walla Walla	At Walla Walla	5 Cos, 2nd Cav	Col. J. P. Hatch*	366
Vanc. Barracks	Vancouver	8 Cos 1st Arty and 14th Inf	Col. L. C. Hunt	442
Fort Klamath	Lake Klamath	2 Cos, Inf & Cav	Maj Leslie Smith	102
			Total for Department	1,804

* HATCH, JOHN PORTER. Born in New York he entered West Point from that state on 1 Jul, 1840 and was commissioned a 2nd Lt. in the 3rd Inf upon graduation on 1 Jul. 1845. He was breveted for gallant and meritorious conduct in battles in the Mexican War and in several battles in the Civil War during which he was breveted a Major General. He was awarded the MEDAL OF HONOR on 28 Oct. 1893 for distinguished gallantry in the battle of South Mountain, Md. on 14 Sep 1862 where he was severely wounded while attacking with one of his brigades under severe fire from the enemy. He was assigned to command the 2nd Cavalry Regiment on 26 June 1881.

Although the following has no particular significance with respect to the beginning of the organized militia in, Washington Territory, it is included in this Chapter chronologically, because it is so descriptive of the primitive conditions still existing in the Northwest at that time, which were not conducive to the organization of an effective Territorial Militia prior to the advent of the railroads in Washington Territory.

EXTRACTS FROM A REPORT OF A JOURNEY MADE BY GENERAL W. T. SHERMAN IN THE
NORTHWEST AND MIDDLE PARTS OF THE UNITED STATES IN 1883

Prepared by John C. Tidball

Colonel, Aide-de-Camp, Brevet Brigadier General

Washington, D. C., October 27, 1883

GENERAL: In compliance with your instructions I have the honor of submitting the following report, made up from my notes of travel taken last summer while accompanying you on your tour of inspection and observation through the northern and middle zones of the western part of the territory of the United States:

The journey, as projected by you, was to be from Buffalo, N. Y. via the lakes to Duluth; thence by Northern Pacific Railroad to Fort Ellis, Montana; from Ellis through the Yellowstone National Park to Missoula; again on the Northern Pacific Road to Coeur d'Alene; and from there, crossing the national boundary at Lake Osoyoos, to Hope, on the Frazer River, in British Columbia. From Hope the journey was to continue via Puget Sound to Vancouver, Wash., and, thence by sea to San Francisco.

* * * * *

Your party, besides yourself consisted of Mr. Chief-Justice Waite and Mr. Justice Gray, of the United States Supreme Court, Colonel R. I. Dodge, 11th Infantry, and myself. The Chief-Justice meeting with an accident in the Yellowstone Park, was compelled to abandon the remainder of the trip.

* * * * *

On the morning of June 20, 1883, General Sherman and myself left Washington, D. C.

* * * * *

July 26. - Six miles further on we came to Stevensville, another village similar to Corvallis (Montana). At the upper edge of the town is St. Mary's Mission, established about 1843 by the pious and kindly hearted Father de Smet. It, with many others scattered with profusion through the Oregon Country, was intended for the proselytism of the aborigines, and for a time was eminently successful. The Indians took to the forms of conversion with avidity. They thought it big medicine. The mission, although in a feeble way, is yet in operation. On the opposite side of the town from the mission is Fort Owen, an old adobe structure, originally half fort and half trading post, built by Owen, an Indian trader,

about thirty years ago. A little way below this, the road crosses the river to the west side on a substantial trestle bridge, and continuing on down re-crosses on another bridge about 5 miles above Fort Missoula.

The Bitter Root is a fine valley, and capable of a much greater population than it now has. The healthy appearance of the inhabitants and the absence of Doctor's signs about the town attest to the salubrity of its climate. It is now within easy reach of the railroad at Missoula.

Upon arriving at Fort Missoula we went into camp; the General was received with the customary salute and inspected the post. Arrangements were made for returning our outfit of ambulances, wagons, camp equipage, and escort to Fort Ellis where they belonged. From here to Coeur d'Alene, 230 miles, we are to travel on the Northern Pacific Railroad. The post of Missoula is located on a level treeless plateau within the fork of the Bitter Root and Hell Gate Rivers. These streams form the Missoula, which further down unites with the Jocko, forming the Clark's Fork of the Columbia. The post is on a bluff overlooking the valley of the Bitter Root. It is well laid out and comfortably built post, with a garrison of four companies of the Third Infantry, under command of Major Jordan.

July 27. - This morning we did not strike our tents, but, packing up our traveling effects, left our camp, and crossing the level and dusty plain five miles to the town of Missoula, took possession of our seats in the car. A couple of hours spare time afforded us opportunity for looking about the place. It is a town of great business activity, combined, as we are informed, with an unusual amount of wickedness of every variety. It is prettily situated on a plateau facing Hell Gate River. South of it, within rifle shot, is the entrance to the great Hell Gate Canyon, the existence of which made the construction of the Northern Pacific Railway a possibility. The streets decorated with worn-out cards from saloons were picturesque with roughly clad miners. Indians with their squaws and papooses, flashily dressed gamblers, and the ubiquitous Chinaman. Less conspicuous were more worthy citizens, many of whom paid their respects to the General at the store of Mr. Baldwin, a pioneer of the place of twenty-two year's standing. At 9 A. M. the train started, and 20 miles from Missoula passed over the great bridge spanning Morentz Gulch. This structure is 226 feet high and 868 long. It is by a few feet the highest bridge in the United States, and is perhaps the highest in the world. It is built on eight wooden towers, upon which rest wooden trusses supporting the railroad track. Soon after passing this we entered forests of firs, pines and tamaracks, which as we proceeded down the Columbia and around Pend d'Oreille Lake, became almost tropical in their luxuriance. The road winds around the mountains and enters the valley of the Jocko, passing by the agency of the Flatheads. Here we saw a great many Indians, assembled on business with their agent. The Flathead Agency is under the control of the Catholic Church, which here supports a Jesuit mission, the Reverend Bishop, boarding our train, and traveling with us for several miles, had a pleasant conversation with the General. At Horse Plains we dined in a canvas shanty, one of a number constituting a town newly formed upon a stumpy patch of ground cut from the dense forest surrounding it. On our train was Chief Moses returning from Washington under charge of Captain Baldwin. With him was Tanasket, head man of the Colville Indians.

Although the road was in good running condition it was nevertheless unfinished and gangs of Chinamen were at work; the woods appeared to swarm with them, and the road was lined with the squalid camps. In the evening after the mosquitoes had assumed sway in the land, it was interesting to witness the activity exercised by these Asiatics in protecting their yellow legs and shaven heads from the ravenous attacks of these insects. The forests are so dense as to preclude settlement, except at great cost of labor, and we saw but few openings until we reached Lake Pend d'Oreille, where are some saw-mills, and upon the lake a steamer. For a great portion of the way the forests were on fire, requiring a strong force and great vigilance to protect the railroad. A broad swath has to be cut through the forest to preserve the road from fire and falling timber. Some of the scenery along this part of the Columbia is surpassingly picturesque. We passed around the irregular shores of Lake Pend d'Oreille just at sunset and the views were unspeakably beautiful. We reached Rathdrum, the station for Fort Coeur d'Alene, about 10 P. M. and were met by General Wheaton with conveyances to take us to his post. The people of the new little town of Rathdrum had got wind of the expected arrival of General Sherman, and had a huge bonfire ablaze, and with anvils were firing a salute in his honor. From Rathdrum to the post, a

distance of ten miles, the road constructed by the troops passes out of the forest across Spokane Plains, and soon after re-entering the woods reaches the post. Here we found a most comfortable camp pitched for us on the shore of the lake.

July 28. - Daylight this morning afforded us an opportunity of seeing what manner of place Fort Coeur d'Alene is. We found it the most delightful site for a military post that heart can desire. It is situated on the angle of the land lying between the shores of the lake and the Spokane river, the outlet of the lake. The lake is picturesque with islands, headlands, and coves; the river is broad, clear, and tranquil; all around are splendid forests. The land upon which the post stands is almost level and only a few feet above the water of the lake. The soil, of coarse, dark sand, is dry. The buildings surround three sides of a large rectangle; the side next to the lake permits a fine view across the water.

The post has ample accommodations for its present garrison, consisting of the headquarters and five companies of the Second Infantry and a troop of the First cavalry. The post is provided with a steam sawmill and on the lake is a steamer of considerable size, built principally by the labor of soldiers. This steamer is used in towing scows, carrying hay, and other supplies from distant parts of the lake and its chief affluents, Saint Joseph's and Coeur d'Alene Rivers. The lake and streams emptying into it are full of the finest trout, and the surrounding forests afford good hunting.

Just outside the limits of the post, looking upon the lake, is a neat and comfortable hotel, a summer resort for people residing in the malarious regions of the lower Columbia. The General was received with the proper salute, and during our stay made a thorough inspection of the place. He had selected this identical spot for the post when, in 1877, he passed through here, traveling over the disused Mullan road. It was then in the heart of the wilderness; now it has the railroad running near it, and the country around is rapidly settling up.

July 29, 30 and 31. Remained in camp making preparations for the continuation of our journey and enjoying the hospitalities of the post. In the meanwhile, General Miles, commanding the department, arrived, accompanied by Surgeon Moore, Medical Director, and Mr. Saurin, First Secretary of the British Legation at Washington. These gentlemen are to accompany us until we arrive at Vancouver. (Wash.)

Our next objective point is Hope, on Frazer River, in British Columbia.

August 1. - This morning Captain and Brevet Major Jackson started with our escort, his Troop B, First Cavalry, and the pack train for old Fort Colville, on the Columbia, where we are to make the crossing.

August 2. - This morning we left our delightful camp on the Coeur d'Alene Lake, and following the general direction of the Spokane River, pitched our tents in the edge of the town of Spokane Falls, on a bluff overlooking the magnificent falls. Until we reach the crossing of the Columbia, our traveling is done in ambulances and our camp outfit is carried in wagons.

Soon after leaving Coeur d'Alene, the road emerges from the forest and crosses Spokane Plains, high dry, rolling lands, with few settlements, but well clothed with grass. Eleven miles down the river, the road crosses to the south side upon a good trestle bridge. About 2 miles below the bridge, on a slender neck between the road and river, we passed the "Boneyard" so named from piles of bones, the remains of Indian ponies captured and killed in 1858, by Colonel Wright, when at war with the Spokanes. The road was excellent, until we reached within 2 or 3 miles of the falls, where it passes over some very rough lava formation. The railroad crosses the Spokane River above the town of Spokane Falls. This is an ambitious town of a few year's growth, containing an estimated population of 3,000 persons. The ambition of the place rests upon the falls, a superb water power, and a superb picture, too. The river, first divided into three channels, makes three separate falls of about 30 feet, and then uniting its transparent green waters, plunges down a sheer descent of 60 feet. Some small milling and wood-sawing industries have grown up here, and, in grinding the product of the new wheat region of Eastern Washington, the place soon hopes to become the Minneapolis of the Pacific Coast. There is now a very large flouring mill in process of construction, and the place boasts of two banks, two papers, and a number of good hotels. The town is neat, clean, and orderly beyond most western places. It is the center

of a rich farming and stock-raising country, which is rapidly settling up with a good class of immigrants. A committee had waited on the General, requesting him to meet the citizens of the place, which he did in the evening at a public hall, and was enthusiastically received.

August 3. - This morning, early, General Sherman, General Miles, and myself, started in a special ambulance for Fort Spokane, distant 65 miles. The remainder of our party continued on the main road leading to Colville. Our plan was to go to Fort Spokane today, and tomorrow, by taking a trail across mountains, intercept our party on the main road. The road for most of the distance to Fort Spokane is over a high, rolling prairie, generally smooth, but occasionally rough with Basaltic outcrops. Sixteen miles from Spokane Falls, we came to the village of Deep Creek, consisting of a flouring mill, store, tavern, blacksmith shop, and a dozen dwelling houses. The blacksmith was firing a salute with his anvil. The prairie all round was staked out, indicating the future streets, avenues; and public squares of a great city.

At Courtwright's Ranch, distant from Spokane Falls 32 miles, we breakfasted, and taking a relay of horses proceeded on over a fertile country rapidly settling up. These settlers in inclosing their fields have no respect for the road but following the section lines with their fences force the road from its old and beaten track around the cardinal points. The new part of the road thus made, being unworked, is very rough and to some extent longer. The country as we approach Fort Spokane becomes more rolling in fact quite hilly and gradually until within a mile or so of the post, where it suddenly breaks off in a steep descent of almost 1,000 feet to the river. Down this descent the road winds to the post, which is situated on a plateau at the junction of the Spokane with the Columbia. The plateau is a level bench about 400 feet above the river, and inclosed by high hills which, circling around to the river above and below, restrict the plain to a length of about three miles, and a width of about three-fourths of a mile. The country here is curiously terraced; on the opposite side of the Spokane six distinct steps can be counted. The site of the post is on one of these terraces. Another, still lower, is next to the river, and one several hundred feet above, has a spring affording a copious supply of water to the post. It also furnishes for the steam sawmill of the post, which is located on this terrace. A beautiful birds-eye view of the post is obtained from this point. The post at present consists of three barracks, six buildings for officer's quarters, a hospital, a building for quartermaster and commissary stores, stables, bake-house, and other buildings, all frame, and neatly and conveniently constructed. Some of them, however, were at the time of the visit unfinished, and more are required to accommodate the garrison without crowding. The garrison consists of four companies of the Second Infantry, and Troop F, of the First Cavalry, all under the command of Lieutenant Colonel Merriam. The soil upon which the post stands is fine and light, overlying a deep stratum of gravel. The post has the reputation of being hot in the summer and cold in the winter, and exceedingly dusty. To the latter we can testify, for on the evening of our arrival a squall came up which raised such clouds of dust as to make it impossible to tell where the solid ground ended and the dust in the air commenced. At a short distance below the post are the remains of a bridge over the Spokane. A bridge here is of importance, as it gives access to the country lying in the direction of the Colville and Spokane Indian Reservations. The Columbia is seen from this point at a point where the Spokane enters it. The terrace formation before mentioned is due no doubt to a lake formerly occupying all this country. At that epoch it was bounded on one side by the Cascade range of mountains, and in bursting at successive periods through this range at the Dalles left deposits in the form of successive benches. In other parts of our journey, further on, we saw a great deal of this singular geological formation.

August 4. - At 9 o'clock this morning we started on horseback to join our party on the road to Colville, accompanied by a detachment of cavalry under Lieut. Bomas. We at first proceeded up the left bank of the Spokane for about 3 miles, and then descending from the plateau by a winding and precipitous trail, crossed the river - the horses by swimming and we in a small skiff. We then proceeded up the right bank for about 5 miles, passing on the way a small Indian settlement, at which were several hundred acres of land under cultivation, mostly in oats. Turning squarely off to the left, we then followed a blind trail over the mountains. This trail gradually grew into kind of a road, which continued

to improve until finally it became good enough for any purpose. It had been cut out a year before by a company of troops, but from disuse, is fast growing up with bushes. The mountains ascending from the river were very steep, but after that, rolling; and heavily covered with pine and tamarack. Owing to the dryness of the season but little water was met with on the route, although there was an abundance of dry courses, which in ordinary times are full. The descent from the mountains was gradual, and we soon came to the head of a small prairie (one of the numerous Camas prairies of this part of the country), low flat and covered with luxuriant grass. Soon after entering this prairie we came to a camp prepared for us, and here was an ambulance and wagon sent across to meet us. Distance from Fort Spokane 27 miles. Two or three squatters had settled on the prairie and were engaged in putting up hay, with a view of wintering stock. The stock grazes during most of the year in the hills and mountains, but during the severe weather of winter has to be fed, and these men take it at so much per head per month.

August 5. - Lieutenant Bomus and his detachment of cavalry took the trail back to Fort Spokane, while we in the ambulance proceeded on, and in 7 miles struck the Colville road, 16 miles from Hain's ranch and 12 from Chewallah. Soon after coming upon the road we rejoined our main party. Following the Colville road, which is a good one, we traversed Long Prairie, a beautiful strip of country 5 or 6 miles long by one broad, fenced in and under cultivation oats, wheat and hay being the chief crops. Passing from this prairie through a strip of woods we entered the valley of the Colville. This is a fine, rich valley, well settled and well cultivated. Most of the settlers are old employees of the Hudson's Bay Company, who, when in 1846 the privilege of trading over this territory was withdrawn from the company, remained as farmers. These men, after the manner of most of the Hudson's Bay Company people, had taken to themselves wives from among the Indians, and their piebald descendents swarmed about their habitations. In this valley are many full-blooded Indians belonging to the Colville Reservation lying to the west of the Columbia. Although so far away from the reservation the agent for these Indians resides in this valley, at Chewallah. Most of the Indians live in lodges, in aboriginal style, and hire themselves out as farm laborers. A few of them have houses of their own and land to cultivate, and more would live in the same manner but for the insecurity of their titles. They do not understand the mode of securing homesteads; the white man does, and comes along with his title complete from the land office, and the Indian has to quit his improvements and leave. Neither do Indians understand taxation, and not understanding it, it is irrepressibly obnoxious to him. Our British neighbors across the border understand the management of the Indian better, and not only secure to him his homestead but remit his taxes, and thus avoid troubles always surrounding the Indian question with us. At Chewallah, or Brown's as it is better known, 28 miles from Hain's, we encamped. The Catholics have a mission here, and as it is Sunday, and the Indians, all pious, they were out in force, in all their gorgousness of scarlet blankets and fancy calico. After church the young bucks showed off by riding furiously around. The young squaws, in bright handkerchiefs and many beads, made themselves attractive to their beaux. Chewallah consists of a store, blacksmith shop, and post office. On the road today we passed a steam launch, which was being transported on a heavy wagon to the Columbia, to be used in the exploration of that river above the Dalles. The exploration is in interest of a projected railroad, to branch off from the Northern Pacific and penetrate the Kootenay country of British Columbia. This launch is probably the pioneer of many steamers soon to ply upon the waters of the upper Columbia. The Colville valley has a great reputation for healthfulness. One of the oldest white inhabitants informed us that he had never known the death of a white person in the valley. Not so, however, with the Indians. Their graveyards are well filled and we observed among them many new graves, all marked with the cross, the symbol of the faith to which they had been converted. From some mysterious cause the Indian naturally, disappear upon the approach of the white man.

August 6. - Continued on through the Colville valley, the cultivated portion of which is about 3 miles wide. Surrounding the valley are mountains. About 23 miles from Chewallah we came to Colville, a village, which besides boasting a brewery, contains a store, or two, a blacksmith shop; and a dozen or so dwellings. Turning to the right we followed the road leading over a low divide to the waters of Mill Creek, upon which is situated the post of Fort Colville, 3 miles from the village just mentioned. Passing

through and beyond the post we encamped on the creek. The garrison of the post was withdrawn about nine months before. The property left behind is in charge of the agent. The post is very prettily situated on a small plain, surrounded by mountains on three sides. The mountains and hills around are covered with fine timber. The post was established in 1859 to guard against the Indians, who were very hostile, having defeated Steptoe, near the Spokane River, the previous year. The post is built of hewn logs, the buildings being arranged around four sides or a square parade. The post had accommodations for four companies. The buildings, particularly the barracks, are now quite dilapidated. Near the post on Mill Creek, is a small village of whiskey shops, such as always spring up in the vicinity of Western posts.

August 7. - We returned, by the way we came, to the village of Colville, and, from there continued on down the valley. In 10 miles we reached the mission of St. Joseph Regis, where the General received a pressing invitation to enter and inspect the institution. We were courteously received by Father Caruana and Sister Bernardina, heads, respectively, of the boys and girls departments. The institution is exclusively for the instruction of Indian youths, for the maintenance of each of whom the United States Government pays \$100 a year. The mission owns a section of land, a great portion of which is under splendid cultivation. The buildings are commodious, substantial and neat. It was the season of the summer vacation, and the boys, - 50 in number, were absent, and so likewise the girls (about 50) except 20, who, expecting us, had been arrayed in all their finery, neat clean and civilized. They were paraded in two semi-circular lines, the smallest in front, and received us with songs of greeting, accompanied by music on parlor organ. After the songs little speeches of welcome were pronounced in succession by several of the children, to which the General replied in appropriate words. The children ranged from four to fifteen years of age; some of them were half-breeds. After the singing one bright eyed little girl, dressed as a beggar child, rehearsed a piece in the most effective and touching manner. Everything about the establishment is neat, orderly and systematic. The girls are taught housework and the boys farming. The sisters in charge are Canadian-French from Montreal, and the children had acquired most perfectly their peculiar accent or broken English.

Leaving the mission we traveled on about 6 miles, when we came to Old Fort Colville, situated on the east bank of the Columbia, about 30 miles south of the boundary line of the United States, and 3 miles above Kettle Falls. This post was built by the British in 1858, for the accommodation of their commissioners, surveyors, etc, then running the boundary line between the United States and the British possession on the north. The commissioners on the part of the United States occupied Fort Colville; the place at which we stopped last night. The former known as Old Fort Colville, after being occupied a couple of winters by the boundary commission, passed into the hands of Indian traders, two of whom, Mr. Brown and Mr. Openheimer, still carry on business here. The buildings are solidly constructed of logs, but now considerably decayed and dilapidated. The Columbia here is swift and clear, 480 yards wide. It is crossed by means of scows propelled with oars. Jackson's troop of cavalry and the pack train had arrived the day before and were encamped on the opposite bank. Leaving our wheeled vehicles to return to Coeur d'Alene, we also crossed and went into camp with Jackson. From here to the Frazer River, a distance of 222 miles, we have saddle-horses and pack-mules only.

The Kettle Falls of the Columbia, just below us, were from time immemorial a famous salmon fishing place for the Indians. It is, however, no longer so; the salmon have become scarce by reason of the great numbers taken for the canneries near the mouth of the river.

August 8. - In the early morning we took an Indian trail leading up Kettle River, passing through heavy forest, over some rough spurs of hills and across sandy, low ground; here and there were Indian cabins and small fields of cultivated land. In our march the General led off, except occasionally, when someone would go ahead as guide; then followed the rest of us in Indian file; after which came our cavalry escort, and finally our pack-train; the latter under charge of skillful packers mounted on mules. This country is infested with a small fly or gnat which is a torment to both man and brute. There is no escape from its pertinacity except by the most industrious application of a leafy branch, and as our party wound along, each one with a bush in hand, we resembled a church procession on Palm Sunday.

Following up the Kettle River for about 7 miles we crossed over to the right bank, and leaving it, took a northwest direction over the rugged spur of a mountain to Deadman's Creek, which we followed up a mile or so and made camp on the best ground we could find in the mountain gorge through which the creek flows. Kettle River here makes a great bend, sweeping around across the national boundary line. A trail follows around this bend, but as it crosses the river many times, is not passable except at low stages of water, when the trail is fordable otherwise it is said to be a reasonable good trail, and was formerly considerably used by Hudson's Bay company people. The trail we were following cuts across the bend 30 miles, and is known as Little Mountain trail. Considerably south of this is another trail, known as the Old Hudson's Bay Company trail. All of these trails have been but little used of late years, and have become greatly obstructed with fallen timber. A couple of companies of Infantry from Coeur d'Alene had been out since the middle of June reopening the southernmost of them, but as this was not the one over which General Sherman wished to travel they were changed over to the Little Mountain Trail, but owing to want of time and energy on the part of the commanding officer they had done but little towards improving it. In consequence of this Lieutenant Abercrombie, with a detachment of Jackson's cavalry had been dispatched ahead of us to do what they could to open the route. He, however, could do little more than keep ahead of us. Caches of oats had been made along the trail at proper distances for camps; one of these was at the point on Deadman's Creek where we now encamped.

In starting out this morning one of the pack mules, after being packed, instigated by the spirit so fittingly expressed by the term "pure cussedness", hid himself in the bushes, and was found only after a troublesome search. It has somehow managed to free itself from its pack, which could be found no where, and, as ill would have it, contained the entire supply of horseshoes for the whole command. This was a loss of no small moment, seeing that our animals had before them a journey of over 200 miles through a country known to be the roughest as possibly could be. Nothing, however, could be done to repair the loss, but right sorely did some of the animals suffer for want of reshoeing before they reached the end of the trip. Aside from this all our packs came into camp in good condition.

Prior to reaching Colville we had been joined by Mr. Willis, a young gentleman, son of the late N. P. Willis, who as a geologist in the interest of the Northern Pacific Railroad, was exploring these regions for coal and other minerals. He had an outfit of two or three persons and several pack animals. He traveled in company with us to Osoyoos Lake, from whence, striking southward, he intended to explore the country in the direction of Lake Chelan. He evidently possesses rare attainments as a practical geologist, and in his observations upon the country over which we were traveling imparted to us most interesting knowledge.

* * * * *

Our trail today, after crossing Kettle River, was decidedly rough; we had commenced to ascend the mountain, which was steep, and the trail around its sides so very sidling as to afford in many places only precarious footing for our animals. A cavalryman and his horse did indeed go over, and, sliding into the ravine many feet below, was extricated with difficulty. For some distance the mountain here, formed of dusty sand interspersed with gravel and boulders, seemed as though upon the point of sliding either from above upon us, or from under us to the abyss below. Owing to the dryness of the season the trail soon ground to dust which rose around the animals in such dense clouds as to prevent them seeing the trail. Rocks, trees, and underbrush obstructed it. The day was hot and insects bad. We made 17 miles.

August 9. - We continued on up the gulch of Deadman's Creek for several miles, and then leaving it climbed the mountain without passing any other streams. Our march of yesterday was hard, but that of today more so. To what we had yesterday was added, for today, entanglements of fallen timber through which the animals had to scramble. Overhead were trunks of trees, limbs, and brush to knock and tear us, the rocky trail was full of the nests of yellow jackets, and these spiteful insects, arising in swarms stung our animals to frenzy; as perversity would have it these nests were mostly in places such that we could not avoid them by going around. The gnats were also tormenting, and many were the swollen ears and bunged-up eyes brought into camp this evening. It was pitiable to see our

animals clambering among rocks and falling timber, scratched and prodded by projecting points, and stung to madness by insects. The sharp point of a limb striking the General's horse made an ugly gash in its belly, causing him to pitch and rear in such a manner as to throw the General, but fortunately upon some bushes, breaking the fall and not hurting him seriously.

The intricacies of the trail were such as to keep each individual on the alert for his own personal safety, and it was in silence that we scrambled on our way. The descent for about 2,000 feet was even worse than the ascent, but after that the trail grew better; there was less fallen timber, underbrush and rocks, and fewer steep places. A thick growth of grass began to appear in the open pine forest, and a few miles farther on brought us to our camping place, already occupied by the trail-cutting party of Lieutenant Abercrombie.

August 10. - This morning we continue down the mountain over a comparative good trail. Near the foot of the mountain we again came to the Kettle River, which we crossed at a good ford, and, continuing up its valley about 10 miles, crossed and recrossed it several times; the last crossing was near the mouth of Tenasket Creek. Along this part of the river the trail occasionally passes over sharp points of hills overlooking the stream, but generally the land is level and rolling. The river is lined with large cottonwood trees, rather a rare sight of late. Near the mouth of Tenasket are a couple of houses built by a white man known as Buckskin John, but now owned by Chief Tenasket, who lives in Osoyoos Lake, but uses the ranches for his cattle herds. There are also here several fields inclosed with good wood fences.

August 11. - As the trail today leads through a bad strip of fallen timber, we did not leave camp until 8 o'clock in the morning, thus giving time to Lieutenant Goethals with a pioneer party to cut it out. The trail leads up a narrow valley of the Tenasket for 3 or 4 miles, passing through the before-mentioned strip of obstructed road; it then leads over the divide to Myer's Creek, another tributary of Kettle River. This divide is a mountain about 1500 feet above the creek. The side upon which we ascended was very steep and in one long stretch. The descent was long and sloping, and covered with a fine forest of pines. Soon after reaching the foot of the mountain we came to Myer's Creek a good size mill stream, edged with willows, cottonwood, and a great variety of berry-bearing bushes. Here we found a couple of ambulances and wagons which had been sent from Lake Osoyoos to meet us. From Osoyoos here there is an old road or trail formerly used for reaching the gold mines about 20 miles north of here on Kettle River. During the day we made 16 miles. The scenery was fine, but much obscured by smoke.

August 12. - The trail does not follow Myer's Creek, but after crossing, it passes directly over the divide to the watershed of the Okinakane. This divide, although containing many short steep pitches, is not difficult or high. To Osoyoos Lake is 18 miles, most of the way without timber. The country is rolling and mostly covered with grass, large areas of which had been recently burned. There was no water the entire distance except in two pools, one of which was too alkaline for use and the other somewhat difficult to reach by reason of the swampy margin. In approaching the Okinakane we passed many Indian ranches with small fields about them. Soon after mid-day we reached Osoyoos Lake, where is located a United States Custom House, the principal business of which is to collect \$1 per head on cattle imported across the boundary from British Columbia. The custom-house is a log cabin shanty with dirt roof, and a small and similar attachment serving the purposes of a kitchen. This squalid establishment stands un-inclosed by fence in the midst of sand and dirt, on the edge of a ravine containing a fine spring of cool water; the only redeeming feature about the place. In front of the house, upon a crooked stick, waved the stars and stripes, below which emblem of sovereignty was the revenue flag. The collector, Mr. C. B. Bash, living here alone was very courteous to us. The day was exceedingly hot and oppressive and although so unattractive, his house furnished us cool shelter from the scorching sun. On the low ground next to the lake is the ranch of Mr. Smith, surrounded with patches of cultivation and fruit trees. From him we obtained melons and apples, the latter of the most excellent variety. Smith keeps a sort of a store, trading, principally with the Indians.

Osoyoos Lake is a strip of water resembling a good sized river; it is in fact the widening out of the Okinakane, which leaving the lake at its southern extremity, flows sluggishly to find its way to the Columbia. The lake is surrounded at a distance of 2 or 3 miles by mountains and hills. The intervening

space is a sloping plain of sand and sage brush. Around the edges of the lake are tule marshes. The water is clear and shores sandy. The region around about is quite destitute of timber and the whole aspect is one of barrenness. In 1860 or 1861 the hull of a steamboat was built on this lake and floated down the Okinakane to ply upon the Columbia above the Dalles. About the same time Mr. Gray and other Oregon Pioneers, with the restlessness characteristic of that class, leaving the smiling lands of Oregon, penetrated with their families to this inhospitable region. After a short sojourn they returned wiser if not better people.

We pitched our camp on a high bluff overlooking the custom-house and close by the camp of a company of the Twenty First Infantry here on temporary duty from Vancouver Barracks, taking care of a quantity of forage sent here for our use. During the afternoon the General was called upon by Tenasket and a large following of his people. He is a respectable looking oldish man, resembling in appearance a Louisiana Creole Planter. He is said to be quite wealthy in cattle and farms. In the night a strong wind sprang up covering everything with dirt, sand and disgust.

August 13. - We were glad to leave this disagreeable place, and too, evidently were the Infantry soldiers who were early in the morning breaking camp preparatory to their leaving for Vancouver. The company proposes to float down the Okinakane on rafts in preference to a hard march overland.

* * * * *

August 22. - Early in the morning the Wolcutt (British Cutter) steamed around to Port Townsend, distance only a few miles, but difficult to find on account of the smoky condition of the atmosphere. This smokiness prevented us from seeing the beauties of Puget Sound.

After a hasty inspection of the post garrisoned by two companies of the Twenty First Infantry, under Lieutenant Colonel Chambers, we continued on to Seattle, where the General was received at the wharf by a crush of citizens assembled to receive him. From Seattle we proceeded to New Tacoma, and next morning took the cars for Kalama, and then a steamer up the Columbia to Vancouver, where the General was received with all the honors of war. We remained in Vancouver until the afternoon of the 25th, when we went over to Portland, where the General was enthusiastically received and escorted to the pavilion, where a vast crowd paid their respects to him.

Late the following evening we took passage aboard the steamer "Oregon" for San Francisco, where, after a delightful passage we arrived on the morning of the 30th.

* * * * *

Very respectfully, your aide,

JNO C. TIDBALL
Colonel and Brevet Brigadier General

GENERAL W. T. SHERMAN
COMMANDING U. S. ARMY

WILLIAM TECUMSEH SHERMAN was born in Ohio and entered West Point on 1 July 1836 from that state. Graduated on 1 July 1840 he was appointed a Second Lieutenant in the Third U. S. Artillery. He was promoted to First Lieutenant on 30 November 1841 and to Captain of Commissary and Subsistence on 27 September 1850. He was breveted a Captain for gallant and meritorious service in California during the War with Mexico. He resigned on 6 September 1853. At the start of the Civil War, 14 May 1861, he was appointed Colonel of the 13th U. S. Infantry; Brigadier General of the Volunteers on 17 May 1861; and served as a Major General of the Volunteers from 1 May 1862 to 12 August 1864; In the meantime he was promoted to Brigadier General of the Regular Army on 4 July 1863 and to Major General on 12 August 1864; He was promoted to Lieutenant General on 25 July 1866 and to General on 4 March 1869. He served as Commander-in-Chief of the Army from 8 March 1869 to 1 November 1883. He retired on 8 February 1884. On 19 February 1864 the following resolution was extended to him from the Congress of the United States:

"To Major General W. T. Sherman and the officers and soldiers of the Army of Tennessee for their gallant and arduous services in marching to the relief of the Army of the Cumberland,

and for their gallantry and heroism in the Battle of Chattanooga, which contributed in a great degree to the success of our arms in that glorious victory". In another resolution of 10 January 1865 Congress extended: -

"To Major General W. T. Sherman and the officers and men of his command for their gallantry and good conduct in their late campaign from Chattanooga to Atlanta, and the triumphal march thence through Georgia to Savannah, terminating in the capture and occupation of that city". He died on 14 Feb 1891

JOHN COLDWELL TIDBALL was born in Virginia and entered West Point from Ohio on 1 July 1844. Graduated on 1 July 1848 he was appointed a 2nd Lieut. in the 3rd US Artillery; to First Lieut. on 31 March 1853 and to Captain on 14 May 1861. He served as a Colonel with the Volunteer Forces during the Civil War during which he was cited for gallant and meritorious service in the battles of Gaines Mill, Va.; Antietam, Md.; Fort Stedman, Va.; Spottsylvania Courthouse; Petersburg and Sedgwick, Va. He was breveted a Major General of the Volunteers on 2 April 1865. He served as aide-de-camp to General Sherman from 1 Jan 1881 to 8 Feb 1884 following which he was appointed a Colonel of the 1st US Field Artillery. He retired on 25 Jan 1889.

CHAPTER V

ORGANIZED MILITIA IN THE CHINESE INCIDENT IN SEATTLE

For several years prior to the Chinese Incident in Seattle there had been a growing hostility towards the Chinese on the part of the laboring classes in Washington Territory as well as elsewhere in the western part of the United States. This was understandable inasmuch as the census of 1880 showed a population of over 100,000 Chinese in the United States a large part of which were on the West Coast. By 1885 the population in Washington Territory of Chinese was estimated at 4,000. They were mostly employed in the coal mines, in hop fields, and as domestics. Only the utmost vigilance on the part of the civil authorities prevented an uprising against them in October and November of 1885 in Seattle. However, in Tacoma on 3 November 1885, anti-Chinese agitators were successful in driving from that city some 200 Chinese. Simultaneously, the Chinese were driven out of the coal mines in King County and from Puyallup Valley. All of this occurred without interference from the civil authorities.

At daylight Sunday morning, February 7, 1886, in accordance with a carefully arranged secret plan, a number of committees in Seattle, composed of five or six men each, proceeded to the Chinese quarters throughout the city, and notified the Chinese to pack up their belongings and prepare to be embarked on the steamship "Queen of the Pacific" scheduled to sail for San Francisco at 1:00 P. M. that afternoon. Shortly after this a large number of wagons appeared on the scene, and the luggage of the Chinamen was piled into them and hauled to the Ocean Dock. Sheriff John J. McGraw, having been notified of the action, immediately came to the docks and directed the police officers to maintain the law. The officers stated they were unable to do anything except to see that the Chinese were not abused and did not propose to stop their removal. At 10:00 A. M. the bell in No. 1 Fire House was rung which brought the populace to the area. Realizing the explosiveness of the situation, Sheriff McGraw set to work organizing and arming his deputies, and getting them in shape to uphold the laws and preserve the peace and good order. In the meantime Governor Watson Squire was notified. He immediately sent a telegram to the Secretaries of War and Interior and to Brigadier General John Gibbon at Fort Vancouver which read as follows:

"IMMENSE MOB FORCING CHINESE TO LEAVE SEATTLE. CIVIL AUTHORITIES ARMING 'POSSE COMITATUS' TO PROTECT THEM. SERIOUS CONFLICT PROBABLE. I RESPECTFULLY REQUEST THAT UNITED STATES TROOPS BE IMMEDIATELY SENT TO SEATTLE. TROOPS FROM PORT TOWNSEND CAN ARRIVE SOONEST AND PROBABLY WILL BE SUFFICIENT. HAVE ISSUED PROCLAMATION".

WATSON C. SQUIRE, GOVERNOR

At noon, Deputy United States Marshal Henry, under an armed escort of 20 or 30 Deputy Sheriffs, proceeded to the corner of Commercial and Washington streets, where he got up on a post and read the following:

PROCLAMATION

TO THE PEOPLE OF WASHINGTON TERRITORY:

WHEREAS; It is represented to me by the Mayor of the City of Seattle as follows:

HON GOVERNOR SQUIRE: - Sir: The Chinese residents of the City of Seattle are being unlawfully removed from the city by a mob unlawfully gathered together; the authority of the city is not sufficient to keep the peace or preserve order. I appeal to you for aid and assistance.

HENRY L. YESLER, MAYOR

"NOW, THEREFORE, I, WATSON C. SQUIRE, GOVERNOR OF WASHINGTON TERRITORY, DO HEREBY PUBLISH THIS, MY PROCLAMATION, WARNING ALL PERSONS TO DESIST FROM BREACH OF THE PEACE, AND THAT PEACEABLE DISPOSED PERSONS SHALL RETIRE TO THEIR HOMES, EXCEPT SUCH PERSONS AS ARE DISPOSED TO ASSIST THE SHERIFF AND THE DULY CONSTITUTED CIVIL AUTHORITIES IN MAINTAINING LAW AND ORDER, AND I REQUEST ALL PERSONS WHO ARE SO DISPOSED TO ASSIST IN MAINTAINING LAW AND ORDER. TO ENROLL THEMSELVES UNDER THE SHERIFF IMMEDIATELY FOR THAT PURPOSE. FUTHERMORE, I ORDER THE MILITIA COMPANIES OF THIS CITY TO IMMEDIATELY PLACE THEMSELVES UNDER ARMS, AND THAT THE COMMANDING OFFICERS OF SUCH COMPANIES REPORT FORTHWITH TO THE SHERIFF OF KING COUNTY FOR THE PURPOSE OF RENDERING HIM MILITARY ASSISTANCE IF NEED BE IN MAINTAINING THE LAW.

DONE AT SEATTLE, THIS 7TH DAY OF FEBRUARY, A. D., 1886.

WATSON C. SQUIRE, GOVERNOR

According to the Seattle Post Intelligencer, the above proclamation was received by jeers and derisive shouts, and the armed escort was followed about, hooted at and jeered in the most boisterous manner on their return to the courthouse.

By that time Mr. McGraw, the Sheriff, had a sufficient force at his command to cope with the mob, although the Chinese had been taken to the wharf from Washington, Mill, Main, South Second, South Third and other streets. While this was going on, a committee went about through the immense crowd soliciting subscriptions of money with which to pay the fare of the Chinese to San Francisco, with very good success, many citizens contributing liberally, who were glad to see the Chinese go, but who opposed their forcible expulsion.

In view of the large number of Chinamen to go, the steamship company reduced the price of steerage tickets to \$7 each, and the committee raised sufficient money to purchase 89 tickets, which were placed in the hands of the Chinese as they were put on board with their worldly goods. After the committee's tickets were exhausted and eight of the Chinamen, who bought their own tickets, had gone on board, there were about 215 Chinamen still in the warehouse, under the guard of those who had brought them there.

Just about an hour before the "Queen" was due to sail, a Chinese resident swore out a writ of HABEUS CORPUS, setting forth that there were 97 subjects of the Emperor of China unlawfully detained on board the steamship "Queen of the Pacific". This writ was served upon Captain Alexander, ordering him to produce the bodies of 97 Chinese in Court and show cause why they should not be released.

At 7:15 Monday morning, 8 February 1886, in response to the writ and the orders of the court, all the Chinese aboard the ship were escorted to the Courthouse by the Sheriff and his posse, assisted by the Captain of the "Queen" and his officers. Of the 97 appearing before the court, 16 Chinamen expressed a desire to stay and 71 a willingness to go. In the meantime, the sum of \$1500 was raised by the citizens to pay the fare of those remaining in the warehouse. By sailing time a total of 196, the ship's capacity for steerage passengers, had been placed aboard.

The "Queen" cast off her lines, and the people on the wharf shook hands and congratulated each other over what they supposed was a happy ending of the very exciting and unpleasant controversy. The Chinamen left on the wharf, under a small escort of deputy sheriffs, left the wharf for their homes. They were harassed and shouted at by hoodlums, until they reached the corner of Commercial and Main Streets, when the crowd closed in on the guard. Being officers of the law, they endeavored to arrest the most loud mouth and violent of their assailants, who instead of submitting, rebelled, and attempted to take the guns from the officers. A hand-to-hand conflict ensued and the officers tried clubbing their

assailants with their guns, but did not seem to accomplish their purpose, but simply served to make their assailants more fierce and aggressive. Excitement ran high and during the melee, several shots were fired and five men were wounded, some slightly, others seriously. In the meantime, the "Seattle Rifles" of the Washington Territorial Militia, still on the wharf and hearing the shooting, formed into a double line and hastened in double quick time to the scene of the shooting. They immediately caused the crowd to fall back while the wounded were removed. However, the crowd swelled to thousands, commenced to gather again. About this time Company D, which had been stationed at the courthouse, came down the street at double time, under the command of Captain J. C. Haines. The crowd thinking Captain Haines was on their side started to cheer. However, Captain Haines proceeded to address the crowd as follows:

"Fellow Citizens: There seems to be some misapprehension upon your part regarding the Chinamen. The "Queen" took 196, all she could lawfully carry, and I am informed that all those left behind, who do not want to stay, will go on the next steamer. I think the best thing for you to do is to disperse and go home. If any laws have been broken, or murder committed, you have your lawful remedy. Until the laws prove inadequate you must look to them for relief, and talk of nothing else."

John Keane, the well known anti-Chinese agitator, took the stand and advised all to go to their homes, saying that enough damage had already been done and it would be folly to cause further bloodshed.

After so much good advise, the crowd dispersed, the military companies and the Sheriff's posse marched to the courthouse and the Chinamen took shelter in their old quarters. The wounded men were taken to Providence Hospital, with the exception of special police officer James Murphy, who was shot in the right forearm while endeavoring to arrest one of the assailants. His wound was slight.

In endeavoring to quell the riot and prevent bloodshed, Sheriff McGraw escaped without a scratch, although he was shot through the coat in two places. One of the wounded was a member of the posse and three others were members of the mob. One of the mob members, shot in the arm and stomach, subsequently died. The others all recovered. Following his death an attempt was made to swear out a warrant for the arrest of members of the Sheriff's posse and the Washington National Guard. However, it was denied by the court.

Immediately after the shooting, many of the leading citizens of Seattle, to the number of about 200, came together at the courthouse and organized a company of "Home Guards", under the command of Captain George Kinnear, and who from that time on to the close of the trouble, were constantly found shoulder to shoulder with the Militia, in the discharge of the duties devolving upon them.

At the same time at the Territorial University a group of "University Cadets" were organized under Captain C. A. Kinnear and in an incredible short time, were seen coming down Second Street on the "double quick" with a steadiness that characterizes veterans, and which is the result only of close attention to drill. Arriving at the rendezvous, they at once swung into line on the left of the "Seattle Rifles", to whom they attached themselves, halted and with set features, brought their guns down with a determination that said: "We are here to stay". They stayed on through until relieved by the regular troops.

Earlier in the morning, the following General Order was issued by direction of the Governor:

GENERAL ORDERS NO. 1

HEADQUARTERS, SEATTLE, W. T.,

February 8, 1886

Martial Law having been proclaimed by me as Governor of Washington Territory, I hereby announce the following members of my Staff, who will be respected and obeyed accordingly:

Assistant Adjutant General - Colonel G. O. Haller

Assistant Adjutant General - G. M. Haller

Aids: J. H. McGraw, George G. Lyon, C. H. Kittinger, L. S. Booth

Judge Advocate General - Henry G. Struve

Quartermaster General - James McNaught

Provost Marshal - A. E. Alden,
Commissary General - George D. Hill
Surgeon General - Dr. T. T. Minor

BY COMMAND OF THE GOVERNOR, WATSON C. SQUIRE,
G. O. HALLER, USA, Asst. Adj. Gen.

This was followed by a Telegram to the President of the United States which read as follows:

Seattle, Feb. 8, 1866

GROVER CLEVELAND, PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES, WASHINGTON, D. C.

IT SEEMS TO ME THAT THE SIMPLEST AND MOST EFFECTIVE WAY OF DEALING WITH THESE LOCAL CHINESE UPRISINGS IS TO SUSPEND THE WRIT OF HABEUS CORPUS AND DECLARE MARTIAL LAW OVER THE DISAFFECTED AREA AT THE EARLIEST MOMENT POSSIBLE. IF, WHICH I DISBELIEVE, THE GOVERNOR HERE HAD THE POWER TO SUSPEND THE WRIT AND DECLARE AND ENFORCE MARTIAL LAW THROUGHOUT SEATTLE, EXCEPTING SAY THE COURTHOUSE AREA, I FIRMLY BELIEVE THE MATTER COULD BE HANDLED EASILY AND WITHOUT BLOODSHED, AND BY THE COURTS AND MILITIA, WITHOUT THE AID OF THE REGULAR ARMY. BUT I DOUBT WHETHER THE MATTER CAN BE DISPOSED OF OTHERWISE WITHOUT MILITARY AID OF UNITED STATES TROOPS.

ROGER S. GREENE, CHIEF JUSTICE

W. H. WHITE, UNITED STATES ATTORNEY

I CONCUR

WATSON C. SQUIRE, GOVERNOR

This was followed a little later by another Telegram which read as follows:

Seattle, Feb. 8, 1886

The President, Washington, D. C.

UPON FURTHER CONSIDERATION AND ADVICE OF THE CHIEF JUSTICE, AND PENDING INSTRUCTIONS FROM YOU, I HAVE ISSUED A PROCLAMATION DECLARING MARTIAL LAW IN THE CITY OF SEATTLE. THE CITY IS IN AN ACTIVE STATE OF INSURRECTION, AND BLOODY WORK IS FEARED TONIGHT.

WATSON C. SQUIRE, GOVERNOR

PROCLAMATION OF MARTIAL LAW BY THE GOVERNOR

WHEREAS, HERETOFORE ON THE 7TH DAY OF FEBRUARY, IN CONSEQUENCE OF AN INFLAMED CONDITION OF THE PUBLIC MIND IN THE CITY OF SEATTLE, AND GRAVE DISTURBANCE OF THE PUBLIC PEACE THEREIN, I, WATSON C. SQUIRE, GOVERNOR OF THE TERRITORY OF WASHINGTON, ISSUED MY PROCLAMATION WARNING ALL PERSONS TO DESIST FROM BREACHES OF THE PEACE, AND PEACEFULLY RETURN TO THEIR HOMES, EXCEPT SUCH AS WERE DISPOSED TO AID THE SHERIFF AND THE OTHER DULY CONSTITUTED AUTHORITIES IN MAINTAINING LAW AND ORDER, AND REQUESTING ALL PERSONS WHO WERE DISPOSED TO ASSIST IN MAINTAINING ORDER TO ENROLL THEMSELVES UNDER THE SHERIFF FOR THAT PURPOSE; AND,

WHEREAS, SAID PROCLAMATION HAS PROVED INEFFECTUAL TO QUIET THE PUBLIC MIND AND PRESERVE THE PEACE; AND,

WHEREAS, NUMEROUS BREACHES OF THE PEACE HAVE OCCURRED, AND MORE ARE THREATENED; AND,

WHEREAS, AN INSURRECTION EXISTS IN SAID CITY OF SEATTLE, BY WHICH THE LIVES, LIBERTY, AND PROPERTY OF THE CITIZENS OF THE TERRITORY, AND SOJOURNERS WITHIN THE TERRITORY, ARE ENDANGERED; AND

WHEREAS, THE CIVIL AUTHORITIES HAVE PROVED POWERLESS TO SUPPRESS SAID INSURRECTION OR PREVENT SUCH BREACHES OF THE PEACE; AND

WHEREAS, THE NECESSITY FOR MARTIAL LAW WITHIN SAID CITY EXISTS, AND IT IS DEEMED PROPER THAT ALL NEEDFUL MEASURES SHOULD BE TAKEN FOR THE PROTECTION OF SUCH CITIZENS AND SOJOURNERS, AND OF ALL OFFICERS OF THE UNITED STATES AND OF THE TERRITORY IN THE DISCHARGE OF THEIR PUBLIC DUTIES WITHIN SAID CITY:

NOW, THEREFORE, BE IT KNOWN THAT I, WATSON C. SQUIRE, AS GOVERNOR OF SAID TERRITORY AND COMMANDER IN CHIEF OF THE MILITARY FORCES THEREOF, DO HEREBY ASSUME MILITARY COMMAND OF SAID CITY OF SEATTLE, AND DO HEREBY ORDER THAT NO PERSON EXERCISE ANY OFFICE OF AUTHORITY IN SAID CITY WHICH MAY BE INCONSISTENT WITH THE LAWS AND CONSTITUTION OF THE UNITED STATES OR THE LAWS OF SAID TERRITORY; AND I DO HEREBY SUSPEND THE WRIT OF HABEUS CORPUS, AND DECLARE MARTIAL LAW WITHIN SAID CITY.

DONE AT THE CITY OF SEATTLE, TERRITORY OF WASHINGTON, THIS 8TH DAY OF FEBRUARY A. D., 1886.

WITNESS MY HAND AND SEAL OF THE TERRITORY.

WATSON C. SQUIRE, GOVERNOR

(SEAL)

In a telegram dated Washington, D. C., the same date, President Cleveland sent the following telegram:

"TELEGRAPH US AT ONCE THE RESULT OF MEASURES TAKEN AND REPORTED IN YOUR LAST DISPATCHES."

Governor Squire replied as follows:

Seattle, W. T., February 8, 1886

SINCE MY PROCLAMATION OF MARTIAL LAW THE CITY IS MUCH MORE QUIET. CITIZEN SOLDIERS ARE PATROLLING THE STREETS AND HAVE SUCCEEDED IN REPRESSING FURTHER OUTBREAK, BUT WE HAVE NOT SUFFICIENT SUPPORT TO ENFORCE MY ORDERS WITH THE VIGOR THIS OCCASION DEMANDS. WE NEED A SMALL UNITED STATES FORCE. PRESENT FORCE, HAVING BEEN ON DUTY FOR FORTY HOURS, IS INADEQUATE TO MAINTAIN PEACE.

On the following day, February 9th, Telegram to the President, was dispatched as follows:
GROVER CLEVELAND, PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES, WASH., D. C.

GENERAL STEVENS, WHEN GOVERNOR OF THIS TERRITORY, PROCLAIMED AND ENFORCED MARTIAL LAW (SEE "COUNCIL JOURNAL", WASHINGTON, 1856-57, PAGE 209), BUT THE U. S. ATTORNEY-GENERAL HAS GIVEN CONTRARY OPINION (SEE VOLUME 8, "ATTORNEY GENERAL'S OPINION", PAGE 365).

MARTIAL LAW IN THIS CITY IS NOW ABSOLUTELY NECESSARY, PLEASE SUPPLEMENT OR REINFORCE MY PROCLAMATION OF MARTIAL LAW IN THIS (KING) COUNTY. WE NEED IMMEDIATELY HERE TWO HUNDRED REGULAR TROOPS.

LAST NIGHT THE CENTRAL PORTION OF THE CITY WAS PATROLLED BY CITIZEN SOLDIERS AND WAS QUIET, BUT THE PUBLIC FEELING IS NOT ALLAYED, AND IN SOME RESPECTS THE DANGER TO THE PUBLIC PEACE IS INCREASING.

IT IS IMPOSSIBLE, WITH OUT LIMITED FORCE OF MILITIA, TO ENFORCE MARTIAL LAW THROUGHOUT THE CITY.

THERE IS ANTI-CHINESE TROUBLE REPORTED AT OLYMPIA BY THE SECRETARY OF THE TERRITORY AND JUDGE HOYT.

OTHER INFORMATION STATES THE CHINESE WERE NOTIFIED TO LEAVE OLYMPIA IN THREE DAYS.

SECRETARY OWINGS ASKS FOR ONE COMPANY OF TROOPS FOR OLYMPIA.

WATSON C. SQUIRE, GOVERNOR
ROGER S. GREENE, CHIEF JUSTICE
W. H. WHITE, UNITED STATES ATTORNEY
GRANVILLE O. HALLER, COLONEL, USA.

The following was received from the President:

EXECUTIVE MANSION
Washington, D.C., February 9, 1886

HON. WATSON C. SQUIRE
GOVERNOR, SEATTLE, W.T.:

The following proclamation has just been issued, and General Gibbon has been ordered to proceed at once in person with troops to Seattle:

BY THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
A PROCLAMATION

WHEREAS, IT IS REPRESENTED TO ME BY THE GOVERNOR OF THE TERRITORY OF WASHINGTON, THAT DOMESTIC VIOLENCE EXISTS WITHIN THE SAID TERRITORY, AND BY REASON OF UNLAWFUL OBSTRUCTIONS AND COMBINATIONS, AND THE ASSEMBLAGE OF EVIL-DISPOSED PERSONS IT HAS BECOME IMPRACTICABLE TO ENFORCE BY THE ORDINARY COURSE OF JUDICIAL PROCEEDINGS, THE LAWS OF THE UNITED STATES AT SEATTLE AND AT OTHER POINTS, AND AT PLACES WITHIN SAID TERRITORY, WHEREBY LIFE AND PROPERTY ARE THUS THREATENED AND ENDANGERED; AND,

WHEREAS, IN THE JUDGEMENT OF THE PRESIDENT AN EMERGENCY HAS ARISEN, AND A CASE IS NOW PRESENTED WHICH JUSTIFIES AND REQUIRES, UNDER THE CONSTITUTION AND LAWS OF THE UNITED STATES, THE EMPLOYMENT OF A MILITARY FORCE TO SUPPRESS DOMESTIC VIOLENCE AND ENFORCE THE FAITHFUL EXECUTION OF THE LAWS OF THE UNITED STATES, IF THE COMMAND AND WARNING OF THIS PROCLAMATION BE DISOBEYED AND DISREGARDED:

NOW, THEREFORE, I, GROVER CLEVELAND, PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA DO HEREBY COMMAND AND WARN ALL INSURGENTS, AND ALL PERSONS WHO HAVE ASSEMBLED AT ANY POINT WITHIN THE SAID TERRITORY OF WASHINGTON FOR THE UNLAWFUL PURPOSE AFORESAID, TO DESIST THEREFROM AND TO DISPERSE AND RETIRE PEACEABLY TO THEIR RESPECTIVE ABODES, ON OR BEFORE 6 O'CLOCK IN THE AFTERNOON OF THE 10TH DAY OF FEBRUARY, INSTANT, AND I DO ADMONISH ALL GOOD CITIZENS OF THE UNITED STATES, AND ALL PERSONS WITHIN THE LIMITS AND JURISDICTION THEREOF, AGAINST AIDING, ABETTING, COUNTENANCING, OR TAKING ANY PART IN SUCH UNLAWFUL ACTS OR ASSEMBLAGES.

IN WITNESS WHEREOF I HAVE SET MY HAND AND CAUSED THE SEAL OF THE UNITED STATES TO BE HERETO AFFIXED.

DONE IN THE CITY OF WASHINGTON, THIS MONTH OF FEBRUARY, IN THE YEAR OF OUR LORD, ONE THOUSAND EIGHT HUNDRED AND EIGHTY SIX, AND OF THE INDEPENDENCE OF THE UNITED STATES THE ONE HUNDRED AND TENTH.

GROVER CLEVELAND

(SEAL)

BY THE PRESIDENT:

T. F. BAYARD

SECRETARY OF STATE

That the Chinese removal scheme was all cut and dried is evidenced by the following letter dated Tacoma, Feb. 5th, 1886 but not delivered in Seattle until the morning of the 9th:

To: Mr. J. H. McGraw, Seattle, W. T.

Esteemed Friend: I was told today by a friend of mine, who claims to be posted on the matter, that plans are all laid for a clearing out of Chinatown in your city the coming week, so you may be prepared for trouble. I am afraid. I think they mean to either burn or blow up with powder. The 15 committee has been very busy here for some days.

Yours truly,

Signature omitted

During the period February 8th to 10th, the Military Headquarters issued the following General Orders:

GENERAL ORDERS NO. 2

February 8, 1886

Until further notice all saloons and places where intoxicating liquor is sold will be forthwith and permanently closed, and all other places of business shall be and remain closed between the hours of 7 P. M. and 6 A. M. each night.

All persons found on the streets after 7 P. M. and before 5 A. M., without the consent in writing of the Provost Marshal, will be arrested.

GENERAL ORDERS NO. 3

February 8, 1886

Captain Green, commanding Seattle Rifles; Captain Haines, commanding Company D, and Captain Kinnear, commanding Home Guards, will report with their respective companies to the Adjutant-General at Headquarters forthwith.

GENERAL ORDERS NO. 4

February 8, 1886

Captain Haines, with his command, will report forthwith for duty to Provost Marshal.

GENERAL ORDERS NO. 5

February 8, 1886

All persons willing to enlist in the public service of the Territory, to serve in the city of Seattle, are thereby called upon to report as recruits to the Provost Marshal, at the court-house in this city.

All persons disposed to violate any laws of the Territory of Washington, or any law or treaty, or the Constitution of the United States, are hereby warned and commanded to leave the city forthwith.

GENERAL ORDERS No. 6

February 8, 1886

The Quartermaster-general will provide suitable office rooms for the commissary general, provost-marshal, Quartermaster General, and the post-surgeon.

GENERAL ORDERS NO. 7

February 8, 1886

The provost-marshal may, in his discretion, upon application, grant written permits to proprietary agents and managers of transportation lines, telegraph offices, newspapers and printing offices, drug stores, hotels, and restaurants to conduct their business during the whole of the day and night.

GENERAL ORDERS NO. 8

February 9, 1886

Any person violating the provisions of any law of the United States or Washington Territory, or the ordinances of the city of Seattle, at the time of the proclamation of martial law heretofore made, will be promptly arrested and summarily dealt with.

GENERAL ORDERS NO. 9

February 9, 1886

The provost-marshal may, at his discretion, upon application, grant permits to proprietors of saloons licensed to sell intoxicating liquors, to open and conduct their business between the hours of 8 A. M. and 5 P. M.

GENERAL ORDERS NO. 10

February 9, 1886

No passes shall be issued to anyone to appear upon the streets after night except such persons as have duties which absolutely require such passes; then only when it is made to appear to the satisfaction of the provost-marshal that the person applying has been a peaceable, law-abiding citizen, who has endeavored to uphold the law within the last ten days. All passes shall be registered in a book kept for that purpose, and the person receiving the same shall enroll his name in said book. Said pass shall specify the hours within which it is good.

Unless issued as above, all passes or papers claiming to be passes shall be taken up by the provost-marshal for cancellation. Colonel S. W. Scott is hereby appointed assistant provost-marshal.

All permits to keep open any place of business must be recorded in the provost-marshal's office.

GENERAL ORDERS NO. 11

February 9, 1886

All constables and police officers of the city of Seattle are hereby authorized and directed to exercise, under the direction of the provost-marshal, the functions of their respective offices, for the preservation of peace and good order.

All arrests made by them for any violation of any law or ordinance of the city of Seattle shall be reported by them to the provost-marshal, who is hereby authorized and directed to issue to these said officers necessary passes to enable them to discharge their duties.

GENERAL ORDERS NO. 12

February 11, 1886

All disorderly persons, or persons having no visible calling or business to maintain themselves, and generally all vagrants, are required to leave the city of Seattle forthwith.

All such persons found on the streets of this city after this date will be arrested and summarily dealt with.

All persons uttering treasonable or seditious language, and who are guilty of publically using words or actions tending to disturb the peace or in contempt of the constituted authorities, will be promptly arrested.

The provost-marshal and other officers and persons authorized to make arrests are specially charged with the prompt execution of this order.

* * * * *

On Wednesday, February 10th, at 2 P. M., the United States troops, consisting of eight companies of the Fourteenth Infantry, numbering 295 officers and men, under the command of Lieutenant Colonel Isaac Denniston DeRussy, arrived on the steamer "Emma Hayward". (from Tacoma)

To prevent the arrival of these troops, a plot was laid and preparations made to wreck the train bearing them at a point in the city of Lake View in Pierce County. The southbound freight-train which left Tacoma on the morning of the 9th, ran into the obstructions which had been placed upon the track, consisting of railroad ties and other material. These were so arranged as to wreck a train coming in the opposite direction, at the speed at which the special train bearing the troops would be running, though no particular damage was done to the freight, approaching as it did.

On the evening of February 10th, General Gibbon arrived, and up to the time of assuming command, and relieving the militia by the regulars, was in constant consultation with Governor Squire.

On Friday, February 12th, General Gibbon addressed the following communication to his excellency, Governor Squire, and upon which outgrew the orders and letters following:

Seattle, W. T., February 12, 1886

HON. W. C. SQUIRE

Governor of Washington Territory.

Sir: I have the honor to state that on my arrival in this city on the night of the 10th, I found everything perfectly quiet and peaceful. The city was under martial law and in quiet possession of the troops. At 6 o'clock on that day there appeared to be no disposition by anyone in the city to disregard the command of the President of the United States, and there was no combination which demanded the interposition of troops.

The riotous proceedings which proceeded the arrival of the United States troops had entirely disappeared, and the prompt action of some members of the citizen soldiery in repelling an unauthorized interference with their performance of duty seems to have had the wholesome result of convincing all that the citizen who acts on the side of the law is doubly armed, and he who acts in opposition to it takes, his life in his hands.

The persons responsible for the shedding of blood in the streets of Seattle are the leaders, who, in defiance of the highest law in the land, undertook deliberately and with "malice aforethought," to violate that law and induce others to do it. These, however, are not the ones to suffer when the real conflict comes, as they never lead on such occasions, but remain in the rear and allow their braver and more reckless dupes to breast the storm they have themselves raised.

When the first attempt to violate the law was made, had there been present a few good policemen, duly instructed in their duty as guardians of society, there is no question in my mind that no such scenes as has disgraced the streets of the city would ever have been enacted, and there never would have been any occasion for the additional disgrace of martial law being proclaimed over the heads of American citizens.

Martial law is by your proclamation still in existence, and in my opinion advantage should be taken of it to arrest every known leader of the late outrages. These men, by inciting others to violations of law, and in some cases aiding in it themselves, are well known to yourself and the civil authorities of the city, and I consider that the welfare of society demands that these men be at once arrested and held for such disposition as may be deemed proper.

I am hereby directed by the President of the United States to aid the civil authorities and help enforce the law, and this suggestion is made with the firm conviction that it is the best, and in fact the only, way at present of attaining these objectives.

I am, governor, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

JOHN GIBBON

Brigadier-General, U. S. Army, Commanding

Seattle, W. T., February 13, 1886

General John Gibbon,

Commanding Department of the Columbia, Seattle, W. T.

General: I respectfully acknowledge receipt of your letter of the 12th instant, suggesting a line of policy to be adopted and pursued in maintaining law and order in Seattle during the present unsettled state, while the city remains under martial law.

The plan submitted has my hearty approval, and its execution under your direction will materially aid me and the civil authorities in upholding the supremacy of the law.

I have the honor, etc,

WATSON S. SQUIRE, GOVERNOR

GENERAL ORDERS NO. 13

MILITARY HEADQUARTERS, SEATTLE, W. T.

February 13, 1886

In times of riot and insurrection it is the manifest duty of every citizen to assist in maintaining the dignity of the law.

When solemn international treaties are concerned it behooves every American to stand up for the sanctity of our national honor.

When the peace and safety of society cannot be preserved by the ordinary process of the law, then the strong arm of authorized military forces must supervene to preserve order.

Gentlemen of the Seattle Rifles, Company D, Home Guards of the city of Seattle, University Cadets, and distinguished gentlemen of my staff, most nobly have you performed your duty in suppressing mob violence inaugurated on Sunday last by the lawless element of your city in the interference with the rights of the people who are lawfully in our midst by reason of treaty stipulations with the country to which they belong.

Not only the people of the Territory, but the people of the entire United States, have cause to thank you for the fearless manner in which you defended your honor and the laws and treaties of your country.

The confidence of the people of the Territory is secured in this, that her citizen soldiers are ever ready to uphold and maintain her dignity.

The attention of the people of the nation is upon you, and by your action within the past five days our countrymen have another proof that the claim of self-government put forth in our petition for admission into the Union is a just one and demands consideration.

The governor takes occasion in behalf of the Territory to proudly thank you all, as soldiers and citizens, for the noble and conscientious manner in which you have discharged the duties you have been called upon to perform.

In consequence of the arrival of troops sent here by the President of the United States, in command of General Gibbon, you will now be temporarily relieved from duty.

General Gibbon will exercise military command, having reference to such existing orders and regulations as he sees fit to adopt.

WATSON C. SQUIRE, GOVERNOR

OFFICIAL: R. G. O'BRIEN, ADJUTANT GENERAL

HEADQUARTERS, SEATTLE, W. T.

February 13, 1886

Major A. E. Alden, Provost-Marshal

Sir: Hereafter no one in the city of Seattle will be arrested for past offenses, except by orders direct from me, either in writing or by message through one of my staff officers.

This order does not apply, of course, to the cases where arrests are made by the members of your police force, or by the ordinary patrols, for present offenses in violation of the existing orders.

JOHN GIBBON, BRIG GEN COMMANDING

Seattle, W. T., February 22, 1886

His Excellency, Governor Watson C. Squire:

Sir: Martial law having been declared within this city on the 8th day of the present month, I deem it proper to say that, while I recognize the necessity for so doing, and fully indorse your action both in declaring martial law and continuing the same until the present time, it is my opinion the time has arrived when the civil authorities should be allowed to resume their functions.

Within the past two weeks many evil-disposed persons have gone away, thereby scattering and weakening the disturbing element; and the power of the civil authorities has been augmented by the addition of twenty five tried and reliable men, under an efficient commander, to the police force of the city, and the organization of a new company of militia, composed of spirited young men, who can be trusted with fire-arms; and the other military companies have been strengthened by a large number of recruits; furthermore, it is to be expected that a portion of the United States military force will be retained here for a time at least.

For these reasons, I believe that the civil power, thus supported by the military, will be able hereafter to subdue any riotous attempts that may be made, and maintain good order in the city.

H. L. YESLER, MAYOR

PROCLAMATION BY THE GOVERNOR

WHEREAS, HERETOFORE, TO-WIT, ON THE 8TH DAY OF FEBRUARY, 1886, A PROCLAMATION WAS ISSUED BY ME FOR REASONS THEN SET FORTH, DECLARING MARTIAL LAW IN THE CITY OF SEATTLE; AND,

WHEREAS, IT APPEARS TO ME THAT SUCH REASONS HAVE, IN A GREAT MEASURE, CEASED TO EXIST, AND THAT THE CIVIL AUTHORITIES OF THE CITY CAN, FROM THIS DATE, PROPERLY RESUME THEIR FUNCTIONS UNDER THE LAW; AND

WHEREAS, THE MAYOR OF SEATTLE HAS THIS DAY COMMUNICATED TO ME HIS ASSURANCE THAT, BY REASON OF THE REORGANIZATION OF THE POLICE, AND THE PRESENCE OF ADDITIONAL POWER, HE IS HENCEFORTH ABLE TO PRESERVE ORDER;

NOW, THEREFORE, I, WATSON C. SQUIRE, GOVERNOR OF WASHINGTON TERRITORY, BY VIRTUE OF THE AUTHORITY VESTED IN ME, DO HEREBY REVOKE AND ANNUL SAID PROCLAMATION TO THE EXTENT THAT FROM THIS TIME FORTH IT SHALL HAVE NO FURTHER FORCE NOR EFFECT IN SUPPRESSING, OR IN ANY MANNER INTERFERING WITH ANY PROCESS OF LAW.

AND ON THIS, THE BIRTHDAY OF WASHINGTON, I DO SINCERELY EXORT ALL MY FELLOW CITIZENS TO A CALM ACCEPTANCE OF THE CONDITION OF ORDER NOW OBTAINED, AND TO THE MOST VIGILANT AND PATRIOTIC EFFORTS FOR ITS MAINTENANCE IN THE FUTURE.

DONE AT SEATTLE, WASHINGTON TERRITORY, THIS 22ND DAY OF FEBRUARY, A. D. 1886

WATSON C. SQUIRE

(SEAL)

BY THE GOVERNOR:

N. H. OWINGS, SECRETARY

SEATTLE, W. T., February 22,1886

THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES
WASHINGTON, D. C.

I HAVE THIS DAY, BY PROCLAMATION, RELIEVED THE CITY OF SEATTLE FROM MARTIAL LAW.

WATSON C. SQUIRE, GOVERNOR

Seattle, W. T., February 23,1886

THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES
WASHINGTON, D. C.

I RESPECTFULLY URGE AS VERY NECESSARY FOR PRESERVING PEACE AND FORESTALLING DISASTROUS CONTINGENCIES OTHERWISE PROBABLE, THAT AT LEAST TWO COMPANIES UNITED STATES TROOPS REMAIN HERE FOR SEVERAL MONTHS.

WATSON C. SQUIRE, GOVERNOR

The following is a list of the members of the Seattle Rifles, "B" Company; Queen City Guards, "D" Company; University Cadets and "Home Guards", who answered the call to duty.

COMPANY "B" (SEATTLE RIFLES)

Captain - Joseph Greene, Merchant

First Lieut. - C. L. F. Kellogg, Lawyer

Second Lieut. - L. R. Dawson, Physician

Sergeants

Chas. Kinnear, Student

G. B. Smith, Clerk

F. M. Street, Journalist

J. A. Whaley, Clerk

Corporals

L. S. Booth, Dep. County Auditor

W. M. Coomb, Machinist

F. T. Coulter, Clerk

N. H. Lattimer, Book-keeper

J. H. Lewis, Lawyer

N. S. Snyder, Printer

Musician - C. Durgin, Clerk

Privates

R. Agassiz, Clerk

Chas. M. Anderson, Civil Engineer

Theo. M. Boardman, Painter

E. S. Briscoe, Dep. County Treasurer

C. L. Denny, Clerk

M. L. Garrison, Student

L. C. Gilman, Lawyer

F. H. Hardwick, Book-keeper

W. L. Ludlow, Asst Clerk, Dist. Court

W. B. Jacklin, Marine Engineer

Hiram J. Jacobs, Lawyer

E. C. Kellogg, Clerk

C. G. Perkins, Clerk

E. C. Kilbourne, Dentist

A. Mackintosh, Banker

W. F. Mayhew, Clerk

O. C. McGilora, Student

N. G. McPherson, Accountant

John C. Michel, Clerk

John G. Scurry, Civil Engineer

A. J. Snyder, Clerk

W. L. Stevenson, Clerk

C. L. Stone, Clerk

A. L. Sutton, Student

COMPANY "D" (QUEEN CITY GUARDS)

Captain - J. C. Haines, Lawyer

First Lieut - E. E. Hunt, Clerk

Second Lieut - J. B. Metcalfe, Lawyer

Sergeants

A. P. Brown, Teamster

P. Farragher, Jailor

T. E. Numan, Laborer

J. R. Smith, Shoemaker

F. M. Thomas, Merchant

C. H. Adsit, Agent

A. P. Anderson, Painter

L. Anderson, Painter

J. W. Anderson, Teacher

H. Argens, Gunsmith

John Bramen, Saloon Keeper

S. Bushong, Machinist

N. Crocker, Upholsterer

W. B. Currier, Barber

N. C. Davis, Clerk

C. W. Franklurd, Painter

E. A. Gardner, Custom Officer

P. Greaney, Merchant

Corporals

T. Beattie, Blacksmith

H. Cann, Engineer

Milo Conrad, Clerk

E. C. Griffiths, Teamster

R. Hummell, Teamster

B. Keagle, Lawyer:

T. H. Kendall, Carpenter

G. G. Startup, Teamster

Privates

W. H. Gorham, Law Clerk

J. Harding, Capitolist

Y. T. Holden, Contractor

S. Kaufman, Clerk

John Kelly, Clerk

W. J. Kenney, Shoemaker

Nels Lewis, Student

C. Mairdment, Plumber

J. McGough, Painter

F. McKeon, Plumber

D. McKinnon, Blacksmith

S. McKnight, Photographer

F. McKowen, Teamster

Musicians

C. Condon, Carpenter

Wm. Crist, Teamster

A. Jones, Student

L. Spray, Student

John Wright, Student

J. McIntyre, Plumber

D. McTavish, Paper Hanger

F. Roberts, Painter

J. W. Smart, Lumberman

H. M. Shaw, Teamster

N. K. Smythe, Machinist

L. Spray, Printer

L. Steaves, Teamster

J. L. Weatherby, Carpenter

L. J. Williams

S. B. White, Teamster

G. Wood, Trimmer

W. F. Wusthoff, Merchant

UNIVERSITY CADETS

Captain C. A. Kinnear

First Lieut. E. T. Powell

Second Lieut. Lt T. R. Berry

Sergeants

E. V. Bigelow

M. Garmley

R. T. Hawley

O. C. McGilora

Corporals

J. A. Porter

D. G. Wakefield

C. C. Ward

W. A. C. West

George Alverson

Wm. Alverson

J. T. Alvord

E. H. Alvord

G. C. Benn

F. W. French

Privates

T. G. Hastie

Thos. Hayhn

F. A. Noyes

W. V. Reinhart

A. L. Sutton

Benj. Weed

"HOME GUARDS"

Capt. G. Kinnear
1st Lieut. J. A. Hatfield
2nd Lieut. W. G. Latimer
G. A. Weed, Surg.

Sergeants
E. M. Carr
T. E. Jones
E. L. Marshall
W. T. Sharp

Privates

H. H. Ames	W. F. Coffman	A. Hamblet	H. Preston
R. Abrams	R. S. Coldwell	A. E. Hanford	W. T. Preston
R. B. Albertson	G. A. Coleman	C. H. Hanford	T. R. Pumphrey
O. E. Anrud	W. J. Colket	F. Hanford	W. H. Reeves
L. A. Banks	J. Collins, Jr.	H. M. Hoyt	W. S. Scott
H. L. Bates	R. S. Cox Jr.	D. Kellogg	S. P. Short
H. R. Bagley	C. A. Craig	J. P. Lange	E. Smith
F. A. Bell	C. D. Davis	R. R. Lombard	W. P. Smith
D. E. Bigelow	Thos Denny	J. D. Lowman	F. Sparling
W. E. Boone	A. J. Fiskin	S. M. McIntyre	W. S. Stephenson
G. W. Bordman	A. M. Frankland	W. M. Morse	W. R. Thornell
Amos Brown	G. W. Furry	E. S. Osborne	A. Ulen
A. Bryan	J. M. Gale	F. H. Osgood	S. B. Vrooman
Thos. Burke	A. M. Gillman	R. B. Partridge	D. Webster
E. B. Buwell	J. Goldsmith	B. Pelly	W. H. Welbon
J. H. Carlisle	F. M. Guye	W. A. Peters	W. D. Wood
F. A. Churchill	G. M. Haller	G. H. Preston	

CHAPTER VI
ORGANIZATION OF THE FIRST AND SECOND REGIMENTS,
WASHINGTON NATIONAL GUARD

The impetus needed for the establishment of an efficient Organized Militia in Washington Territory was not only the Chinese Incident in Seattle, but also from a trend which was sweeping the country following railroad and other riots in the larger cities in the East and Middle West. This trend can best be told through an extract from the report of the Inspector General of the Army for the year 1890, who had inherited that year the responsibility of inspecting the organized militia from the Adjutant General of the Army. In his report to the Secretary of War he quoted the following on the history of the improvement in the National Guard, which had been written by General George W. Wingate, president of the National Guard Association of the United States from 1878 to 1890:

"Before the war of the rebellion, a comparatively few of the Northern States had any militia worthy of name. In many, the old "training days" had brought the name into contempt. Massachusetts had probably the best equipped and organized of any. New York had a very large force on paper (19,000 men with 8 Major and 28 Brigadier Generals and 63 regiments), but with the exception of a few "crack" organizations in larger cities, the standard of efficiency was very low.

At first organizations were independent companies which finally became amalgamated into regiments. In some regiments they still wore distinctive company uniforms (as is the case at present in some of the Southern States). In all cases the uniforms were more adopted for show than for work. There was no pretense of any military knowledge of anything beyond formal drill. Camps were occasionally held, but they were military picnics. Discipline was poor and the men were at liberty, as is the case with the English volunteers, to resign from the service when they saw fit, and fines imposed for delinquencies could not be enforced. This, however, was largely made up for by the ESPRIT DE CORPS of the organizations, which were then filled up in the large cities by young men of high social positions. These not only uniformed themselves, but in many cases purchased their own arms and even fitted up and paid the rent of their own armories. With the exception of a few arsenals belonging to the States, there was scarcely an armory used by a regiment which was suitable for the purpose. The best were those in the city of New York, and these were situated over the public markets. The brigade and division organizations were wretched, the general officers having hardly an idea of their duties and exercising little influence.

"At the outbreak of the war all the organized militia in the country at once volunteered and served as a rule three months, their ranks being filled to the maximum. In addition many new organizations in the different States were formed as "home guards" which as a rule also volunteered and served in the field. The militia was called out in '61, '62, and '63, in some instances, in '64.

"After the first services in 1861, and during each following year, a large number of the officers and men of the different organizations joined the volunteers as non-commissioned officers and officers, and many rose to high rank.

"While the regiments of the National Guard learned in the service a great deal, they were still behind the present military standards. During its continuance the volunteering and the hard service reduced their numbers, recruiting become so difficult as those having military inclinations preferred to volunteer, that in 1864 the governor of New York issued a proclamation urging the necessity of keeping up the National Guard of the State.

"At the close of the war in 1865, the National Guard sank to quite a low ebb. The public had been so accustomed to actual warfare that militia duty was looked down to. The men themselves had been under such a constant strain and had been required to make so many sacrifices in serving and in holding themselves in readiness for service that they dropped out of the service on all sides and recruits were difficult to obtain.

"About 1868 an improvement began to manifest itself. Many officers who had distinguished themselves in the volunteer service accepted commissions in the militia of the various States. Their experience soon manifested itself in the introduction of military usages and discipline, and particularly in official correspondence and the method of keeping official books, which had previously been ignored. Inefficient organizations were disbanded. Public interest also began to revive, and the States began to recognize the duty of properly arming and equipping their militia.

"In 1871 the new spirit which was showing itself in the National Guard manifested itself by the formation of the National Rifle Association; a manual of rifle practice (Wingate's) was issued, and in 1873, Creedmoor, Long Island, New York, was opened and the first military rifle competitions organized under State auspices took place. Up to this time, instruction in rifle practice was a thing unknown, and as a rule men served the terms of enlistment without firing a shot. Even those who had served in the field had received no systematic instruction in this respect, officers and men being equally ignorant. The system of rifle practice first introduced in New York, it was found, helped to popularize the National Guard, and was followed by New Jersey, Connecticut and Pennsylvania, and by degrees throughout all the States having a uniformed militia. This was greatly encouraged in this respect by the interest which was shown by the Army, the engineers sending a team to the first matches at Creedmoor in 1873, a system being adopted by the department commanders about 1876 and by the Army in 1877.

"The introduction of rifle practice in the militia may be considered as marking the dividing line between the old "militia" methods and the present movement in the direction of practical military instruction and a high standard of efficiency. One of the most decided indications of this change was the assumption by the new troops of the title "National Guard" and their objection to the term "militia". This of course does not include Massachusetts, whose troops are still proud to call themselves "The Massachusetts Volunteer Militia".

"The railroad riots in 1876 were a forcible lesson of the necessity and value of an efficient national guard. Having such an organization, New York escaped the expense which other States were subjected to.

"The losses sustained by Pennsylvania in Pittsburgh during these riots induced that State to thoroughly reorganize the National Guard and to bring it nearer to the model of the regular Army than any other state had previously done. They also led many States which had previously done nothing to take steps to provide an efficient National Guard. The riots in Cincinnati and Chicago also did much in that direction.

"Camps of instruction, it is believed, were first started in Connecticut. An artillery camp at Fort Hamilton was held in 1878 where the batteries of New York were associated with the Army, and it proved of value. Since about 1880 camps have been generally introduced in all the States having an organized National Guard. There has been a steady advancement in their management in the direction of practical military service and better discipline, and they have been of the greatest service.

"In January, 1878, the National Guard Association was formed for the purpose of securing from Congress a modification of the obsolete law in regard to the militia, which since 1792 has been contained in the United States Revised Statutes. This association included, and still includes, the leading members of the National Guard in most of the States. Through its influence many publications were made in leading newspapers and magazines, in which the necessity of an effective militia was pointed out, many officers of national reputation contributing articles on this subject. In this way a strong public sentiment, particularly in the Middle and Eastern States, was gradually created in favor of the National Guard, and larger appropriations began to be made by these States for National Guard purposes than had ever been the case in previous years. This gradually extended to the west.

"On the other hand the tax-payers required that this appropriation should be expended to secure practical results. To secure this consolidation the wiping out of weaker organizations and a reduction in number of higher officers has been relentlessly pursued. For example, before the war in New York the militia of New York was computed at 19,000, including several regiments of cavalry. During the war it rose to 50,000. In 1868 forty-two regiments were disbanded. By 1879 the force was reduced to 20,000,

and the latter was cut down in 1881 to about 10,000, the appropriations being, if anything, increased. Strict inspections, examination for promotion of commissioned and non-commissioned officers was required, signal corps established, suitable armories provided, field equipment issued, and State uniforms adopted.

"As the States gave more aid to their troops, they felt justified in demanding more, and stricter discipline began to be instituted.

"The Centennial parade in New York in 1889 may be considered as marking another important departure. Few of the spectators who witnessed it supposed that any such force of well disciplined soldiers existed in the United States as participated in that parade; and the moral effect cannot be estimated. It created for the National Guard a respect it had never had before. It also had other effects. Those States that were represented by troops uniformed in the ancient style became impressed with the necessity of a practical service uniform. On the other hand it was thought by several of the States that some concession must be made to looks, and some more showy uniform; adopted for parades than the blouse to secure the best results for their organization".

Inspector General, Brigadier General J. C. Breckinridge in submitting his annual report, and his first one, stated:

"The general policy of our nation has always opposed, and will ever continue to oppose, the maintenance of a large standing or regular army. Our graphical position with reference to other powers is such that the possibility of war at any time is very remote; and the sudden precipitation of such conditions is almost impossible. A regular establishment of sufficient strength to contend unaided by the militia with any declared enemy has never existed. Therefore we may never hope for a permanent army strong enough even to bear unaided the first shock of hostile demonstration from any power likely to invade our borders, much less fight a war to a successful termination, or to invade the territory of another power. We must, therefore, recognize and admit the fact that hereafter, as heretofore, our wars must be fought by the militia; and the regular Army will hereafter, as heretofore, become the organizers, leaders, and commanders of this great army. "Undoubtedly this change in attitude by regular army leaders precipitated increased interest in the various States and resulted in wide-spread organization of militia units, especially in the western part of the United States."

Washington's First Regiment was organized as a battalion on the 9th day of March, 1886. George D. Hill, Captain, U. S. Army, Retired, was elected Lieutenant Colonel of the Battalion and Stanley W. Scott, Major. Although organized only as a battalion there were sufficient companies to have formed a regiment with a full complement of field and staff officers. This was not done, however, until the 28th day of April 1887, at which time Captain John C. Haines, of Company D, of Seattle, was elected Colonel of the First Regiment; Major Scott to Lieutenant Colonel; and Charles Evans of Tacoma, Major.

The companies composing the regiment were:

Former Designation	New Designation	Location
Seattle Rifles	Company B	Seattle
Tacoma Guards	Company C	Tacoma
Queen City Guards	Company D	Seattle
Home Guards	Company E	Seattle
Blakeley Rifles	Company F	Port Blakeley
Home Guards	Company G	Seattle
None	Company H	Vancouver

The Capitol Guards of Olympia was designated Company A, however, by the time the regiment was formally organized, it had been disbanded due to the personal expense involved in maintaining it.

In the meantime, General Orders No. 3, 1887, directed the assembly of the officers of the companies east of the Cascades to meet on 26 March 1887 at Walla Walla for the purpose of establishing the Second Regiment. Major Charles M. Anderson, Assistant Adjutant General, presided at the meeting and was elected Colonel of the regiment, receiving 15 of the 19 votes cast. Captain Enoch

W. Pike was elected Lieutenant Colonel and Captain J. T. Burns, Major. The companies comprising this regiment were:

Former Designation	New Designation	Location
Grant Rifles	Company A	Walla Walla
Klickitat County Guards	Company B	Goldendale
None	Company C	Centerville
None	Company D	Waitsburg
Walla Walla Artillery	Company E	Walla Walla
Dayton Grays	Company F	Dayton
None	Company G	Spokane Falls

At this meeting, the following resolutions were presented for consideration:

"WHEREAS, The officers of the National Guard of Washington Territory stationed in the eastern portion of the said Territory, and in convention assembled in Walla Walla, on March 26, 1887, pursuant to General Orders No. 3, have organized a regiment, which is, in said order, designated as the organization of the Second Regiment, N. G. W., and,

"WHEREAS, The said regiment organized on the 26th day of March, 1887, the same being the first meeting of a sufficient number of regularly organized companies of the National Guard to exceed a battalion, therefore, be it

"RESOLVED, That the officers of the companies stationed in eastern Washington believe that it would be right and just to designate such organization as the First Regiment of N. G. W. and be it further

"RESOLVED, That his excellency Governor Watson C. Squire, in forming the command west of the mountains, designated the same as a battalion, therefore there could be no organized regiment to take that number, and we therefore ask Governor Watson C. Squire, Commander-in-Chief of the National Guard, to designate the regiment lately formed in Walla Walla, the First Regiment, N. G. W., as an act of right and justice to this, the pioneer regiment of Washington Territory."

"On motion, the resolutions were adopted by a unanimous vote."

* * * * *

"On motion, the convention adjourned sine die."

C. M. ANDERSON, Major and A. A. G., Wn. N. G.

"I certify that I inspected the ballot taken for the election of Colonel, as herein stated."

W. C. ELLSWORTH, Commissary General, W. N. G.

Apparently no action was taken by the Governor on the foregoing resolutions as evidenced by the retention of the regiment west of the Cascades as the First Regiment.

On the 28th of June, 1887, the first troop of Cavalry, designated "Troop A, First Cavalry", was organized at Sprague, Lincoln County, and mustered into the service of the Territory by Lieutenant John Murray of Walla Walla, special mustering officer. E. G. Pendleton was elected Captain; R. G. Paddock, First Lieutenant; and B. B. Glasscock, Second Lieutenant.

The following is a register of the Commissioned Officers of the Washington National Guard as of 1 October 1887:

Commander-in-Chief - Governor Eugene Semple, Olympia
Brigadier General - R. G. O'Brien, Adjutant General, Olympia
Brigadier General - D. G. Lovell, Quartermaster General, Tacoma
Brigadier General - W. C. Ellsworth, Commissary General, Walla Walla
Assistant Adjutant General - Colonel Henry G. Struve, Seattle
Acting Judge Advocate General - Colonel Thomas T. Minor, Seattle
Acting Surgeon General - Colonel Fred W. Becker, Colfax
Assistant Inspectors of Ordnance - Lt. Col. G. Morris HaLLer, Seattle
Lt. Col. Henry Landest, Port Townsend
Lt. Col. Michael McCarthy, Walla Walla
Major Albert Whyte, Tacoma
Aide-de-Camps- Lt. Col. J. Randolph Smith and Lt. Col. John L. Sharpstein

FIRST BRIGADE

Brigadier General - George D. Hill (Capt. US Army, Ret.) Seattle - Commander

FIRST REGIMENT

Colonel - John C. Haines, Seattle; Lt. Col. S. W. Scott, Seattle; Major Charles Evans, Tacoma.

REGIMENTAL STAFF

Major F. A. Churchill, Surgeon, Seattle; Chaplain and Reverend Lemuel H. Wells, Tacoma; First Lieut. C. L. F. Kellogg, Adjutant, Seattle; First Lieut. George B. Adair, Quartermaster, Seattle; First Lieut. John A. Hatfield, Seattle.

"B" COMPANY

Capt. Joseph Green, Seattle; C. L. F. Kellogg, Seattle; 2nd Lt L. R. Dawson, Seattle

"C" COMPANY

Capt. W. J. Fife, Tacoma; 1st Lt Paul P. Walsh, Tacoma; 2nd Lt. W. W. Sprague, 2nd Lt.

"D" COMPANY

Capt. J. H. McGraw, Seattle; 1st Lt. E. E. Hunt, Seattle; 2nd Lt. A. P. Brown, Seattle

"E" COMPANY

Capt. E. M. Carr, Seattle; 1st Lt. W. T. Sharpe, Seattle; 2nd Lt. J. F. McNaught, Seattle

"F" COMPANY

Capt. G. Kinnear, Seattle; 1st Lt. W. V. Rinehart, Seattle; 2nd Lt. D. H. Gilman, Seattle

"G" COMPANY (Port Blakeley)

Capt. Joseph W. Phillips; 1st Lt. David B. Dickson; 2nd Lt. S. F. Smith

"H" COMPANY (Vancouver)

Capt. T. B. Glover; 1st Lt. John E. Francis; 2nd Lt. Harry C. Dannals

SECOND REGIMENT

Colonel Charles M. Anderson, Walla Walla; Lieut. Col. Enock W. Pike, Goldendale; Major J. T. Burns, Dayton

REGIMENTAL STAFF

Surgeon - Major John Hudgen, M. D., Waitsburg; Asst. Surg. - Capt. Howard R. Keylor, M. D. Walla Walla; Chaplain - Capt. and Reverend Henry R. Foster, Walla Walla; Adjutant - 1st Lt. Wm. B. Buffam, Walla Walla; Quartermaster - 1st Lt. Henry Kelling, Walla Walla; Commissary - 1st Lt. W. Q. Webb, Spokane Falls

"A" COMPANY (Walla Walla)
 Capt. Paul d'Heirry; 1st Lt. M. F. Kelley; 2nd Lt. Frank Wolf
 "B" COMPANY (Goldendale)
 Capt. C. S. Reinhart; 1st Lt. Dudley Eshelman; 2nd Lt. Fay Fenton
 "C" COMPANY (Centerville)
 Capt. John Jackells; 1st Lt. George W. Billington; 2nd Lt. Frederick Vunch
 "D" COMPANY {Waitsburg)
 Capt. Henry G. Shuham; 1st Lt. David N. Smith; 2nd Lt. T. C. Taylor
 "E" COMPANY
 Disbanded (Walla Walla)
 "F" COMPANY (Dayton)
 Capt. John Carr; 1st Lt. D. H. Hardin; 2nd Lt. George Wicks
 "G" COMPANY (Spokane Falls)
 Capt. George W. Greene; 1st Lt. J. Kennedy Stout; 2nd Lt. John F. Hemenway
 FIRST CAVALRY {Sprague)
 Capt. E. G. Pendleton; 1st Lt. R. G. Paddock; 2nd Lt. B. B. Glasscock

On June 17, 1887, permission was given the First Regiment to go into a camp of instruction near Tacoma, on the 2nd day of July following, for a period of eight days. Colonel J. C. Haines, commanding, detailed 2nd Lieut. W. W. Sprague of Company C as assistant Quartermaster with orders to go to Olympia and draw the necessary tents and such equipage as was on hand for the purpose.

The tents, poles and pins, belonging to the Territory, together with a number borrowed from private owners, were shipped to Tacoma in charge of an officer and every facility was extended by the Adjutant General to make the encampment a success. Realizing, however, the number of tents owned by the Territory, together with those borrowed from private parties, were inadequate to the needs of the encampment, through the kindness of General Gibbon, commanding the Department of the Columbia, the Adjutant General secured 30 tents from the Arsenal at Fort Vancouver for the encampment.

In his report to the Governor, the Adjutant General described the encampment as a failure. He stated that the failure was due to several causes, the chief one of which was the determination of the citizens of Tacoma to celebrate the completion of the Northern Pacific Railroad on the 4th, 5th and 6th of July. As a result the accommodations promised the regiment were not forthcoming. The ground selected for the camp was on a farm of Mr. Scott, about four miles southwest from Tacoma, on a level plain.

Lieut. Sprague, assistant quartermaster, was supplied a detail of six men by Company C, which appeared upon the ground at 4 o'clock in the afternoon of the 2nd of July to prepare a camp for some 150 to 200 men, before dark, a duty which, in view of the inexperience of those engaged in the work, required not less than twenty men the greater part of a day. The work was further delayed due to two of the detail being incapacitated due to premature celebration of the 4th of July. However, the detail of Lieut. Sprague, a sergeant and four men labored until midnight, and when the regiment arrived about 1 o'clock A. M., only a few tents were ready for occupancy; no straw for bedding and no commissary stores.

To meet the situation, Colonel Haines at once returned to Tacoma, and finding that they could not be furnished in time to make the purposes of the encampment of much service, and in view of the fact that the regiment was to take part in the parade at the celebration, he ordered the regiment back to Tacoma and took quarters in the basement of the Central School Building, where the regiment remained until July 6th, at which time the companies from Seattle returned home. The tentage and other property were returned to Olympia and to Fort Vancouver.

Although the Adjutant General had annually called to the attention of the Territorial Legislative Assembly the need for revision of the Militia Laws and a Tax to support the Militia, it was not until

January 1888, that such action was taken. The revision of the Militia Laws and the Act to provide for transfer of the tax provided therein, were as follows:

AN ACT
FOR THE MORE EFFICIENT ORGANIZATION AND DISCIPLINE OF THE
MILITIA OF THE TERRITORY OF WASHINGTON
BE IT ENACTED BY THE LEGISLATIVE ASSEMBLY OF THE TERRITORY OF WASHINGTON:

SECTION 1- The Militia of this Territory shall consist of all able-bodied male citizens between the age of forty-five and eighteen years, except such persons as now are, or hereafter may be, exempted by the laws of the United States, or of this territory.

SECTION 2 - Persons whose religious tenets or conscientious scruples forbid them to bear arms, shall not be compelled to do so in time of war, but shall pay an equivalent for personal service.

SEC. 3 - The Brigadier General, Colonels or commandants of regiments and battalions, shall severally appoint their staff officers of the line and staff ranking as such.

SEC. 4 - The military board provided by this act shall fix by law the method of dividing the militia into regiments, battalions and companies, and make all other needful rules and regulations in such manner as they may deem expedient, not incompatible with the constitution of the United States, or the organic act of Washington Territory and shall fix the rank of staff officers.

ARTICLE I

SECTION 1. That it shall be the duty of the assessor of each county in this territory, annually, at the time prescribed by law for assessing property, to make out a list of all persons in their respective counties who are liable to do militia duty under the laws of the United States and of this Territory, which list shall be alphabetically arranged, and shall designate the precinct in which each person named in such list resides, which shall be filed by such assessor in same time and in same manner as is provided by law for the assessment roll, and the auditor shall keep the same open for inspection as is provided by law for the assessment roll, and also record the same in his office, in a book to be kept by him for that purpose.

SEC. 2 - That the said assessment list shall be corrected in the same manner and at the same time as is provided by law for the assessment roll, and it shall be the duty of the auditor of each county to deliver to the Adjutant General of the territory a duplicate of said list, certified by him, within twenty days after the list has been corrected, and the compensation for making out such military list shall be determined and fixed by the county commissioners.

SEC. 3 - If any assessor shall neglect or refuse to perform any of the duties required of him by this act, he shall be subject to the same penalties, liabilities and punishment, as is provided by law for neglect or refusal to perform any of the duties required of him for the assessment of taxes; and, moreover, he shall forfeit and pay the sum of not less than three hundred and not more than one thousand dollars, to be sued for in the name of the Territory by the district attorney of the respective county, and recovered in the name of the Territory and paid into the military fund of the Territory, and if the auditor shall neglect or refuse to make and deliver to the Adjutant General a duplicate of the military assessment list, as directed by this act, he shall forfeit and pay the sum of not less than two hundred and not more than five hundred dollars, to be sued for and recovered in the same manner as is provided in this section with respect to the assessor, and paid into the military fund of the Territory.

ARTICLE II

SEC. 4 - All persons subject to military duty under the laws of this Territory and not exempt therefrom by the provisions of this act, and such other male persons who shall voluntarily enroll themselves, shall be divided into two classes, to-wit: One consisting of those who enlist in the active militia of the Territory under the provisions of this act, which shall be known as the National Guard of

Washington, and the other to consist of all those subject to military duty, but not included in the above active or enlisted militia; the latter class to be known as the Washington reserve militia.

SEC. 5 - The following persons are exempt from military duty: First - All persons in the army or navy or volunteer force of the United States, and those who have been honorably discharged therefrom; all persons who shall have served in the National Guard of Washington for the term of seven years, and have been honorably discharged therefrom; all the judges and clerks of the several courts of this Territory, and the Territorial and county officers. Second - Idiots, lunatics, paupers, habitual drunkards, and persons convicted of infamous crimes; provided, that the aforesaid exempted persons included in the first sub-division of this section shall be liable to military duty in case of war, insurrection, or imminent danger thereof.

ARTICLE III

SEC. 6 - The Governor of the Territory shall be commander-in-chief of the Militia, and shall have the power to appoint one Quartermaster General, one Inspector General, one Judge Advocate General, one Paymaster General, and one Surgeon General, each with the rank of Colonel, and four aides-de-camp with the rank of Lieutenant Colonel, and one assistant Adjutant General with the rank of Major. The Surgeon General shall be exofficio chairman of any board of surgeons convened for the purpose of examining those who may desire positions on the medical staff of the Territory.

SEC. 7 - At each general election there shall be elected by the people one Brigadier General, and one Adjutant General with the rank of Brigadier General, who shall hold their respective offices for the term of two years, from the first Monday in January following their election and until their successors are elected and qualified. The Brigadier General shall appoint one assistant Adjutant General, one brigade quartermaster, each with the rank of captain, and three aides-de-camp with the rank of first lieutenant, all to be commissioned by the governor. The brigade quartermaster shall also be the commissary of subsistence. The Adjutant General shall appoint one assistant Adjutant General with the rank of Colonel, and two aides-de-camp with the rank of captain.

SEC. 8 - The Territory shall constitute one brigade, and shall be divided by the military board into two regimental districts, with power to alter and change the same at pleasure.

SEC. 9 - All enlistments in the National Guard of Washington shall be for the term of three years, and the military board shall adopt such muster-in form, oath or affirmation and triplicate muster-in papers, for the provisions of carrying out the act; one copy to be forwarded to the Adjutant General's office, one to the regimental headquarters, and a copy to be retained by the commanding officer of the company of which he shall be a member; the signing of said papers, and taking the oath as above required upon enlistment, shall constitute a valid enlistment for three years in the National Guard of Washington.

SEC. 10 - Commissions of officers on the personal staff of the commander-in-chief, and staff of general officers, shall continue in force only during the term of office of said commander-in-chief, or general officer, or during their pleasure.

SEC. 11 - In time of peace the National Guard of Washington shall consist of not more than twelve companies of infantry and one company of cavalry. The said companies may be arranged into regiments or battalions. Infantry and cavalry companies, under the provisions hereof, shall consist of not less than twenty four nor more than sixty non-commissioned officers, musicians and privates. Any company presenting less than the minimum number of non-commissioned officers and privates at any stated muster of company, regiment or brigade, shall be disbanded by order of the commander-in-chief. The commissioned officers of said regiment and company shall be the same as those of similar organizations in the army of the United States.

SEC. 12 - That the organized companies now comprising the active militia of this Territory shall hold their positions in their respective regiments or battalions, and are hereby declared a part of the National Guard of Washington, and all companies organized under the provisions of this act shall take their place in rank according to date of commission of commanding officer; provided, the number of

active infantry companies do not exceed twelve in number; and further provided, that in case any of the existing companies decline to avail themselves of the provisions of this act within sixty days from and after its passage, they shall be disbanded, and the arms and equipments held by such companies shall be returned to the Territory forthwith.

SEC. 13 - There shall be a military board, consisting of the Brigadier General (who shall be chairman of the board), the Adjutant General, and one field officer to be appointed by the commander-in-chief. The military board shall constitute an advisory body to the commander-in-chief in all the military interests in the Territory. They shall audit all claims against the Territory, and no contract on behalf of the Territory for military purposes, shall be valid as against the Territory until the same shall be approved by this board. They are hereby authorized and empowered to prepare and promulgate the necessary provisions, rules and regulations for the organization, government and compensation of the National Guard of Washington not inconsistent with the laws of the United States or of the Territory of Washington, and said provisions, rules and regulations, together with such alterations or amendments as may be required from time to time, when approved by the commander-in-chief shall be in force from the date of their publication in general orders; they shall have power to make any changes in the military organization of this Territory that may become necessary to conform said organization to the laws of the United States; provided, that the expenses thereof to the Territory shall not be increased by such a change. A majority of said board shall constitute a quorum for the transaction of business.

ARTICLE V

SEC. 14 - Every commissioned officer of the National Guard of Washington shall provide himself with a suitable uniform within sixty days from date of his commission; but every non-commissioned officer, musician and private, shall be furnished with a uniform, arms and equipment at the expense of the Territory, as hereinafter provided.

SEC. 15 - The Territorial military board shall caused to be procured the uniforms, arms, equipments, and camp and garrison equipage which may be required from time to time for the purposes provided in this act, and they shall prescribe the rules and regulations under which they shall be issued to and used by the National Guard of Washington; provided, that the price paid for arms, uniforms and camp and garrison equipage shall in no case exceed the prices paid for the said articles of like quality for the army of the United States. The said uniforms shall be prescribed by the military board.

SEC. 16 - Whoever shall secrete, sell, dispose of, offer for sale, or in any manner pawn or pledge or retain or refuse to deliver to an officer entitled to take possession thereof uniform, arms or equipments, or other property which shall have been procured under the provisions of this act, wear any such uniform or equipments without the permission of his commanding officer, shall be deemed guilty of a misdemeanor, and shall be punished by imprisonment in the county jail for not less than ten nor more than thirty days, or by fine of not less than ten dollars nor more than one hundred dollars.

ARTICLE VI

SEC. 17 - When any company shall be fully organized under the provisions of this act, having not less than the minimum number of uniformed members, the Territory will pay annually the sum of three hundred dollars, or so much thereof as may be necessary for the use of such building or rooms to be used by the said company for headquarters, armory and drill room, and other necessary expenses of running such company. The military board shall prescribe the necessary rules and regulations for the care and government of the said armory.

SEC. 18 - Each and every company organized under the provisions of this act, shall meet at least twice in each month at their armory for military instructions, at which time the commanding officer of the company, or some suitable person detailed by him, shall drill the company not less than two hours, in the school of the soldier, the manual of arms, and the movements of the company.

SEC. 19 - There shall be an annual muster and camp of instruction of the National Guard of Washington at such time and place, or places, as the commander-in-chief may designate, at which time

the companies shall be drilled, inspected and reviewed by battalions, regiments or brigades. Such camp of instruction shall continue for a period of not less than three nor more than six days, and shall be governed by such rules and regulations as shall be prescribed by the military board, and there shall be two annual parades; one on Memorial Day and on the Fourth of July.

ARTICLE VII

SEC. 20 - The military forces of this Territory, when in actual service of the Territory in time of war, insurrection, invasion, or imminent danger, shall, during their time in service, be entitled to the same pay, rations and allowances for clothing as are at the time of the said service allowed by law in the army of the United States.

SEC. 21 - No officer, non-commissioned officer, musician or private shall receive any compensation from the Territory during time of peace, except as in this act provided; when in attendance at annual muster or camp of instruction, the National Guard of Washington shall receive the following compensation per diem: Non-commissioned officers, musicians and privates, one dollar and fifty cents; in addition thereto each officer and enlisted man of the National Guard of Washington shall be entitled to one ration per day while in attendance at said muster or camp of instruction.

SEC. 22 - In case of war, insurrection, invasion or imminent danger thereof, or any forcible obstruction to the execution of the laws, or reasonable apprehension thereof, the governor, if he deems the organized National Guard insufficient to defend the Territory or to aid civil authorities to enforce the laws, may, in his discretion, either call for volunteer recruits to temporarily fill companies of the National Guard to the maximum strength or authorize the temporary volunteer companies, or he may do both; such temporary volunteers shall be discharged when directed by the commander-in-chief, or as soon as the emergency for which they were required has passed, and while in service they shall be subject to the same discipline and penalties and receive the same pay as the regular National Guard.

SEC. 23 - If any soldier is wounded or otherwise disabled, or is killed, or dies of wounds received while doing military duty according to law in case of invasion, insurrection or disturbance of the peace, he, his widow or children shall receive from the Territory such just and reasonable relief as the legislature shall deem proper.

ARTICLE VIII

SEC. 24 - The Governor may order court-martial for the trial of officers and enlisted men of the National Guard on proper charges and specifications, the proceedings of which shall be as provided by the military board, conforming to the regulations, articles of war and practice for the government of the army of the United States as near as may be; and the Governor in ordering a court-martial, shall detail a judge-advocate for the same.

SEC. 25 - Regimental and battalion court-martial may be convened by order of commandants of regiments or battalions approved by the Governor under such regulations as the military board may prescribe. The proceedings, findings and sentence of all courts-martial shall, unless otherwise ordered by the Governor, be by the Judge Advocate General and approved or disapproved by him.

SEC. 26 - The president of a court-martial may issue subpoenas, enforce the attendance of a witness, and punish a refusal to be sworn, or to answer, as provided in civil actions.

SEC. 27 - Commandants of companies may appoint courts of discipline, under the rules and regulations prescribed by the military board for the trial of members of their respective companies for violations of the military law, the general code of regulations or the authorized by-laws of their companies.

SEC. 28 - When fines assessed by court-martial or courts of discipline are not paid within ten days after the sentence is approved by the reviewing officers, and returned to the commandant, a list thereof and of the delinquents shall be placed in the hands of justices of the peace within the precincts in which the delinquents reside, who shall thereupon render judgment against such delinquents separately,

together with the cost of the suit without issuing process, and shall issue execution thereon, without stay, directed to any constable of the proper precinct, who shall collect the same without exemption.

SEC. 29 - Dues levied by the by-laws of any militia organizations may be collected by civil suit without right of stay or exemption; and all suits for the collection of fines and dues shall be brought in the name of the Territory of Washington for the use of the company, but in no case shall the Territory pay any costs of such suit.

SEC. 30 - In all criminal prosecutions for violations of the provisions of this act, fines and penalties collected by justices of the peace as hereinbefore provided, shall be paid into the treasury of the proper county, and applied to the support of the common schools.

ARTICLE IX

SEC. 31 - The commander-in-chief shall have power in case of invasion, insurrection or breaches of the peace, or imminent danger thereof, to order into the service of the Territory any of the companies, battalions, regiments, or Brigade of the National Guard or of the militia force of the Territory that he may deem proper, and under the command of such officers as he shall designate; and in such case the forces so called into service shall receive the same pay and rations as troops in the service of the United States.

SEC. 32 - Any non-commissioned officer, musician or private, who shall neglect or refuse to obey the orders of his commanding officer, in case of invasion, insurrection, riot, tumult, breach of the peace or resistance to process, hereinbefore provided for, shall be liable to a fine of not less than twenty nor more than one hundred dollars and imprisonment in the county jail for a period not exceeding three months.

ARTICLE X

SEC. 33 - The uniforms, arms and equipments required by law and regulations of every soldier of the National Guard, shall be exempt from all suits, distresses, executions or sales for debt, or payment of taxes.

SEC. 34 - That all military commissions of both the militia and volunteer service, the issue of which is authorized by the laws of the Territory, shall be signed by the Governor, sealed with the great seal of the Territory, and attested and recorded by the Adjutant General.

SEC. 35 - For the purpose of raising revenue to defray the current expenses of the militia, there is hereby levied, and the proper officers shall collect, a tax of one fifth of one mill upon all property in the Territory, subject to taxation, for the fiscal year ending September thirtieth, eighteen hundred and eighty eight, and for each fiscal year thereafter.

SEC. 36 - The revenue raised under the provisions of this act shall be paid into the Territorial treasury, and be converted into a special military fund, from which special fund only shall be paid any of the expenses authorized by this act, and this act shall not be construed to authorize any expenditures in excess of such revenue for any one year.

SEC. 37 - The auditor of the Territory is hereby authorized and required to draw warrants on the Territorial treasurer for the purposes and amounts specified in this act, on the presentation to him of itemized bills and estimates, verified by affidavit of the claimants, audited by the military board and approved by the Governor.

ARTICLE XI

SEC. 38 - The military officers of this Territory not hereinbefore provided for shall be chosen as follows: The field officers of regiments and battalions, by the written or printed votes of the commissioned line officers of the companies of the respective regiments or battalions; field officers of regiments or battalions shall hold office for four years, and until their successors are chosen and qualified; commissioned officers of companies shall be elected by the written or printed votes of the non-commissioned officers and privates of their respective companies.

SEC. 39 - The commissioned officers of companies shall hold office for three years, and until their successors are elected and qualified.

SEC. 40 - The commissions of all field officers now in force shall expire on the first day of June, eighteen hundred and eighty eight, when an election will be held in compliance with the provisions of this act, and the commissions of all company officers now in force shall expire on the first day of May, eighteen hundred and eighty eight, when an election will be held in compliance with the provisions of this act.

SEC. 41 - All appointments, elections and promotions to office hereafter in the militia of the Territory of Washington, shall be on their proper qualifications to fill the office for which they are elected, and the military board shall cause the proper rules, and provide for an examination, as often as they may deem it for the best interest of the National Guard, of all officers comprising the militia; and all applicants for promotion or election shall be examined in the tactics in use in the United States army, and in the various branches of military science, and the military board shall have, and are hereby empowered, to summons any officer or officers before any board of examiners that they shall provide. Any officer failing to appear before such board after proper notification, shall be guilty of disobedience of orders.

SEC. 42 - The military board shall cause and require proper bonds to be given, with good and satisfactory sureties, from all officers who have any military Territorial property in their charge or possession, said bonds to be filed with the Adjutant General before any commission shall be issued or property turned over to applicants.

SEC. 43 - In time of peace the Adjutant General shall be ex-officio Quartermaster General, and shall perform the duties of the office; he shall give such bonds to the Territory for the proper discharge of the duties of his several offices as the military board may determine, said bond to be placed in the custody of the Territorial treasurer, as security to the Territory.

SEC. 44 - The military board is hereby authorized to provide each organized regiment or battalion now formed, or that may be formed, under the provisions of this act, and that the Brigadier General commanding the brigade shall certify that it is such a state of discipline and efficiency as to be deserving of the honor, with a regimental flag and regimental guidon.

SEC. 45 - Such regimental or Territorial flag shall be blue silk, with the arms of the Territory embroidered or painted in the center, with the number, motto and arms of service of the regiment in a scroll underneath. The size of the flag shall be six feet six inches fly, and six feet on the pike. The fringe shall be yellow, inches deep, and the cord and tassel blue and white intermixed. The length of the pike shall be ten feet, including the spear.

SEC. 46 - The national flag and regimental guidons carried by each regiment shall be the same as prescribed for regiments of the same arm in the United States army.

SEC. 47 - No flag but that of the United States and that of the Territory of Washington shall be carried by the National Guard of Washington Territory.

SEC. 48 - The systems of tactics and field exercises ordered to be observed by the army of the United States, and the different arms of service, or such other system as maybe prescribed by the military laws of the United States, shall be observed by the militia of this territory, to the exclusion of all other systems.

SEC. 49 - For the improvement of the National Guard, and the use of its weapons in target practice, the military board shall provide the rules to govern all ranges and the system of carrying out the rifle practice.

SEC. 50 - All active members of the National Guard of Washington are hereby declared exempt from all military, poll or road tax, and jury duty, so long as they continue to be active members of the military organization of this Territory.

SEC. 51 - This act shall be printed in pamphlet form, and the Adjutant General shall distribute to the commissioned officers of the National Guard of the Territory one copy thereof to each, at as early a day as possible after approval by the Governor.

SEC. 52 - All preceding acts or parts of acts in conflict with any of the provisions of this act, or upon any subject embraced within it, are hereby repealed, and this act shall take effect immediately after its approval by the Governor.

APPROVED JANUARY 28, 1888

AN ACT
TO (FOR) CARRYING INTO EFFECT THE PROVISIONS OF AN ACT ENTITLED
"AN ACT FOR THE MORE EFFICIENT ORGANIZATION AND DISCIPLINE
OF THE MILITIA OF THE TERRITORY OF WASHINGTON"

APPROVED JANUARY 28, 1888

BE IT ENACTED BY THE LEGISLATIVE ASSEMBLY OF THE TERRITORY OF WASHINGTON:

SECTION 1. - That until the collection of the tax provided for in section number 35, of an act entitled "An act for the more efficient organization and discipline of the militia of the Territory of Washington" approved January 28, 1888, the expense incident to the service of the National Guard of Washington for the year 1888 shall be paid out of the general fund of the Territory, upon vouchers duly approved by the military board and the Governor.

SEC. 2. - Upon payment into the Territorial treasury of the tax provided for in section 35 of the act aforesaid, the Territorial treasurer shall transfer from the said military fund to the general fund the amount by him ascertained to have been paid out of said general fund on account of the National Guard of Washington.

SEC. 3. - This act shall take effect and be in force from and after its approval by the Governor.

APPROVED FEBRUARY 2, 1888

Section 13 of the foregoing act, it may be recalled, provided that there should be a Military Board, consisting of the Brigadier General, the Adjutant General and one field officer appointed by the Governor, who would have the power to make all needful rules and regulations for the government of the National Guard of Washington, including the contracting for and purchasing of uniforms, etc, as would be necessary to the service. The board was created and included Brigadier General Rossell G. O'Brien, the Adjutant General; Brigadier General A. P. Curry of Spokane Falls, appointed by the Governor to fill the unexpired term of Brigadier General Hill, who resigned; and Colonel Charles M. Anderson of the 2nd Regiment.

The first act of the Military Board was to advertise for bids for the necessary uniforms. Bids were received from several uniform companies in the East and after careful consideration the contract for supplying uniforms was awarded to the Pettibone Manufacturing Company of Cincinnati, Ohio.

Prices quoted by this company were as follows:

Full Dress Uniform Coats, each, for Infantry and Cavalry	\$7.35
Full Dress Uniform Trousers, each, for Infantry and Cavalry	3.20
Full Dress Uniform Trousers, for Cavalry	3.70
Full Dress Uniform Helmets, cork body, for Infantry	1.65
Full Dress Uniform Helmets, w/cords, tassels and plumes, Cavalry	3.25
Regulation Fatigue Cap, for Infantry and Cavalry60
Regulation Fatigue Coats or blouses	3.75
Regulation overcoats	11.25

The following is a statement of the amount expended initially by the Military Board for articles of uniforms and other equipment in 1888-89:

Purchased From	For What Purpose	Amount
Pettibone Mfg. Co.	Uniforms, flags, guidons, helmets	\$8,855.60
Capt. J. F. Hemenway	Uniforms of Co. G, 2nd Regt turned over to the Territory	179.70
Maj G. W. Greene	Sundry articles from Pettibone Mfg Co	146.50
Maj G. W. Greene	Complete Drum Major outfit from Pettibone Mfg Co	99.50
Maj G. W. Greene	Sundry articles from Pettibone Mfg Co	80.10
Maj G. W. Greene	Paid for sewing trimmings on 2nd Regt. band uniforms	68.00
Neustadter Bros	Blankets and bindings	1,537.34
Pettibone Mfg Co	Uniforms	2,178.60
Neustadter Bros	Blankets	183.30
Neustadter Bros	Binding	3.00
St John Ladies Guild	Cutting and binding blankets	50.00
Toklas and Kaufman	Thread for binding blankets	<u>1.50</u>
		\$13,383.14

During 1888-89 expenditures for transportation amounted to \$1,229.85; Armory accounts which included rentals was \$4,753.52; the subsistence account was \$78.30; Pay account \$34.38; Incidental expense account which covered account books, postage, expenses of the military board, expenses of examining boards, office supplies, printing and miscellaneous personal expenses of officers on official business amounted to \$4,256.34. Total expenditures for the period January 1, 1888 to September 30, 1889 was \$23,735.53.

Results of the annual enrollment of eligible males under the foregoing Militia laws was as follows:

Adams County	417	King County	11910	Skamania County	127
Asotin County	229	Kitsap County	1511	Snohomish County	1311
Chehalis County	1597	Kittitass County	No report	Spokane County	6270
Clark County	1618	Klickitat County	999	Stevens County	423
Clallam County	No report	Lewis County	1884	Thurston Co.	1725
Columbia County	962	Lincoln County	2439	Waukiakum Co.	140
Cowlitz County	961	Mason County	No report	Walla Walla Co.	2880
Douglass County	No report	Okanogan County	383	Whatcom Co.	1081
Franklin County	No report	Pacific County	687	Whitman Co.	3196
Garfield County	740	Pierce County	5164	Yakima Co.	<u>1092</u>
Island County	367	San Juan County	229	Total	51,377
Jefferson County	1035	Skagit County	No report		

At an election held May 14, 1889, under Section 3 of the Enabling Act, the people of Washington chose seventy-five delegates to frame the Constitution of Washington. The Convention of delegates met at Olympia on the 4th day of July 1889 and adjourned on the 22nd day of August 1889. The Constitution was ratified by the people at an election held on October 1, 1889, and on November 11, 1889, in accordance with Section 8 of the Enabling Act, the president of the United States proclaimed the admission of the State of Washington to the Union.

Sections of the Constitution applicable to the Militia were as follows: *****

ARTICLE 1 -DECLARATION OF RIGHTS *****

Sec. 18 MILITARY POWER, LIMITATION OF. The military shall be in strict subordination to the civil power. *****

ARTICLE III -THE EXECUTIVE

* * * * *

Sec 8 COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF. He shall be commander-in-chief of the military in the state except when they shall be called into the service of the United States.

* * * * *

ARTICLE X
MILITIA

Sec. 1 WHO LIABLE TO MILITARY DUTY. All able-bodied male citizens of this state between the ages of eighteen (18) and forty-five (45) except such as are exempt by laws of the United States or by the laws of this state, shall be liable to military duty.

Sec. 2 ORGANIZATION - DISCIPLINE - OFFICERS - POWER TO CALL OUT. The legislature shall provide by law for organizing and disciplining the militia in such manner as it may deem expedient, not incompatible with the Constitution and laws of the United States. Officers of the Militia shall be elected or appointed in such manner as the legislature shall from time to time direct and shall be commissioned by the Governor. The Governor shall have power to call forth the Militia to execute the laws of the state to suppress insurrections and repel invasions.

Sec. 3 SOLDIER'S HOME. The legislature shall provide by law for the maintenance of a soldier's home for honorably discharged Union soldiers, sailors, marines and members of the state Militia disabled while in line of duty and who are BONA FIDE citizens of the state.

Sec. 4 PUBLIC ARMS. The legislature shall provide by law, for the protection and safe keeping of the public arms.

Sec. 5 PRIVILEGE FROM ARREST. The Militia shall, in all cases, except treason, felony and breach of the peace, be privileged from arrest during their attendance at musters and elections of officers, and in going and returning from the same.

Sec. 6 EXEMPTION FROM MILITARY DUTY. No person or persons, having conscientious scruples against bearing arms, shall be compelled to do militia duty in time of peace: PROVIDED, such person or persons shall pay an equivalent of such exemption.

With the adoption of the foregoing, the legislature on March 27, 1890 approved new Militia laws, which repealed all previous acts, including the Act of January 28, 1888. Many of the sections of the new act remained in effect until 1943 when the Militia laws became the Military Code of Washington.

CHAPTER VII

EARLY USE OF THE WASHINGTON NATIONAL GUARD IN EMERGENCIES

This chapter is intended to cover use of the Washington National Guard in emergencies prior to the turn of the century. It will cover five different calls into service three of which were the great fires in Seattle, Spokane and Vancouver and the other two during labor troubles in King County and at Illwaco. The operational reports of the Commanding Officers of troops in each of these incidents will be used to tell of the services rendered to the citizen in the early days.

REPORT OF COLONEL J. C. HAINES

HEADQUARTERS FIRST REGIMENT, NATIONAL GUARD OF WASHINGTON

Seattle, Wash. June 20, 1889

Brigadier General R. G. O'Brien, Adjutant General, National Guard of Washington:

"General. - I have the honor of submitting to you the following report concerning the operations of the troops under my command during the recent great fire at Seattle:

"The fire started in a paint shop situated in the basement on the southwest corner of Front and Madison streets, at what is known as the Denny Block, and is supposed to have been caused by the overturning of a glue pot. This block was a frame structure extending along Front street from Madison to Columbia, a distance of 240 feet, and extending back to the alley in the rear a distance of 120 feet. A strong wind was blowing from the northwest which, speedily fanned the flames to such an extent that in a few minutes the entire northern portion of the block was on fire. The fire department was immediately called out, and two lines of hose run to the burning building, but in a few minutes the streams became so weak that they could not reach the top of the structure and it was apparent that there was no water with which to fight the fire. Both firemen and citizens then turned their attention to the moving of property from the burning buildings, but this work was soon stopped by the flames which, within twenty minutes from the time the fire started, swept from one end of the block to the other.

"On the east side of the street, immediately opposite the Denny Block was a row of frame buildings extending half way down the block to the south, and immediately south of that was a large four story building known as Frye's Opera House. It was built of brick and it was hoped would defy the flames. By this time, however, the high wind carried the sparks, fragments of burning shingles, etc., over a large district to leeward of the fire and in this way the mansard roof of the opera house soon caught and the intense heat drove back the firemen and citizens to the southward. The buildings in the block immediately south of the Denny Block were partly frame and partly brick, those on the west side being two-story wooden structures which ignited in a moment, and the flames leaping across the street communicated with the brick buildings on the east side.

"At this juncture it became apparent that nothing but the blowing up of the buildings in the southward path of the fire could possibly avert a general conflagration, and, acting upon this idea about four o'clock, large charges of powder, dynamite and other explosives were placed in the block immediately south of the Denny Block. Explosions produced no appreciable effect other than the shattering of windows in the buildings in the vicinity. Immediately south of this block was a large, substantial brick building, known as the San Francisco Block, and from this point to Mill street, a distance of 600 feet, the buildings on the west side of Front street were entirely of brick and stone, but those on the east side were all of wood for the same distance. An effort was made to blow up some of the wooden buildings on the east side of the street, but the charges of powder which were used for that purpose did not move the buildings but simply scattered the burning brands and cinders far to the leeward. All hope of saving the San Francisco Block was then abandoned, and several charges of dynamite were placed on, it, but failed to explode. I have been informed that this was owing to the fact

that the person who placed them there supposed that dynamite could be exploded in the same manner as gun powder, by ignition, consequently the dynamite simply burned up without effect.

"It is my opinion that if a squad under the command of an officer drilled and experienced in the use of explosives had been at hand, the city could have been saved and the fire restricted within a radius of not exceeding two blocks.

"All the powder in the city had by this time been expended. The water supply was exhausted, the progress of the fire had been so rapid that the firemen in many cases had been driven from the streets without being able to save the hose, which burned where it lay, and all the district north of Mill street and west of Second, comprising most of the heaviest business houses, was a sheet of flames. The side streets were black with people carrying their property to places of safety, and the air was full of flying boards and goods thrown from buildings.

"A short distance south of the San Francisco Store was the Gordon Hardware Company's block. In this building there were over thirty tons of cartridges which exploded rapidly, and the Seattle Hardware Store immediately south contained twenty tons of cartridges, which, as the fire reached them, also exploded, but without injury to anyone. The general confusion which prevailed, and the fact that valuable goods were piled up in the streets in all directions, emboldened, thieves to such an extent that they commenced, carrying away property boldly through the streets. In some cases the thieves were discovered and chase was given, and they were rescued from lynching only by the vigorous efforts of the police. It was reported that several attempts at incendiarism had been discovered and there seemed to be great danger that the lawless element would soon become too strong for the small force of police at the city's command, particularly after nightfall. It became apparent to me that nothing but the presence of the Military force, at least during the night, would avert pillage, robbery, and probably graver crimes, and I accordingly, at about five o'clock, went to Mayor Moran and tendered him the services of the three companies stationed at Seattle for the purpose of assisting the civil authorities in the protection of life and property and the preservation of the public peace. My offer was gladly received by him and requested me to order them out and place them on duty as speedily as possible. Nearly all the members of these companies were sufferers by the fire. Many of them were property owners to a very considerable extent, and were engaged in endeavoring to save what they could from the flames. Many were members of the Volunteer Fire Department and had been working ever since the conflagration started, and were almost exhausted with their labors. The flames were sweeping with almost lightning rapidity to the southern portion of the city and enveloping the leading hotel the - "Occidental" - and to the south of it there was scarcely anything but wooden buildings. It was impossible to give any signal to call the members of the National Guard together, or in the general confusion to notify them individually. I wrote an order as follows:

ATTENTION NATIONAL GUARDSMEN
COMPANIES B, D, AND E, FIRST REGIMENT, N. G. W., ARE ORDERED TO REPORT AT
THE ARMORY AT 7 O'CLOCK IN FATIGUE UNIFORM FOR GUARD DUTY.

J. C. HAINES, COLONEL, COMMANDING

"This I posted in a conspicuous place on a building on the south side of Mill Street, but in a few minutes the flames had crossed the street and the building was on fire. Despairing of notifying the members of the Regiment in any other way, I put on my uniform, mounted a horse and rode down through the streets. This attracted the attention of the members of the Regiment who were working at the fire, which was then at its height, and in response to the inquiries which arose on all sides, I notified them of the order to assemble. Most of the force soon gathered at the Armory and as soon as they had assumed their uniforms, they also went through the streets notifying the men as they saw them. The manner in which the call was responded to, in my opinion, furnishes the most exalted example of unselfish devotion to duty on the part of National Guardsmen that has been afforded since the Civil War. Men left their property which they were engaged in saving, came immediately to the Armory, put on their uniforms, and fell into line without thought of any thing save obedience to orders. I do not think

that there was a man in the three companies, then ordered out, who was not a loser by the fire and who had interests which most pressingly demanded his presence and attention, but there was not a murmur, not an application for an excuse, and at eight o'clock fully one hundred men had reported at the Armory for duty. By this time the entire business part of the city was on fire. The streets were crowded with men, women and children rushing from the scene of the conflagration saving what property they could.

"The police officers, although struggling manfully and doing the best that could be done with the small force at the disposal of the chief, were powerless to quell the turbulent and lawless.

"The flames swept up Mill street to Third and menaced the Court House and Jail, and the Sheriff, United States Marshal, and Chief of Police, assembled the United States, county and city prisoners, numbering, in all about three hundred, and marched them to the Armory and there turned them over to my command for safe keeping. I had at this time stationed Company D, Captain Kellogg, Commanding, on Second street, which was the eastern boundary of burning district north of Mill street. Sentries were posted at intervals up and down the street with orders to check all attempts at robbery, incendiarism and other acts of lawlessness. Company B, Capt. Joseph Green, Commanding, was ordered to guard the prisoners at the Armory. They were somewhat turbulent, and many of them evidently, thought that under the general excitement it would be easy to escape. Many of these prisoners were held for grave crimes, one being under sentence of death and several indicted for murder in the first degree. There was no place in which they could be confined at the Armory, and they were gathered in a corner of the Drill Hall and a line of sentries established to keep them in that place. So threatening did some of the prisoners become that it became necessary for me to order the Company guarding them to shoot anyone of the prisoners who attempted to break through their line after being challenged and halted. This order was given in the presence of the prisoners and they immediately quieted down and remained in their places. The course of the fire changed somewhat and it became evident that the jail would not burn, and, therefore, at about half past eight o'clock, the Sheriff ordered me to return the prisoners to the jail. I detailed Company E, Captain Carr, Commanding, for that purpose. He then had present with him some forty men and it became a difficult and dangerous task to take this large body of prisoners through the crowded streets to the jail which was a distance of twelve blocks. This duty was accomplished, however, with a courage, firmness and discretion which reflects the highest credit upon Captain Carr and his command. Not a single attempt was made to escape and every prisoner was lodged behind the bars in a short time after the order was received. In the meantime Company B was ordered down town with instructions to extend the line of pickets along Third and Fourth streets, with orders similar to those already given to Company D.

"The area covered by the fugitives from fire, and the goods rescued from the flames, was so large that as soon as Company E had finished transferring the prisoners to the jail, I was obliged to detail it also for duty in the district east of the fire with orders similar to those given the other companies.

"This put all of the three companies on duty with the exception of a few sentries at the Armory, which had now become the headquarters for the city government and the asylum for many persons who had become homeless by reason of the fire. This building is 80 x 180 feet in size, contains a drill hall 80 x 120 feet, three company rooms, a band room, a room for Regimental Headquarters, a large club room, a gymnasium 30 x 60 feet, a large kitchen, with a fine range complete with cooking utensils, a wash room, bathroom, etc.

"It was constructed by a corporation, composed of citizens interested in the welfare and maintenance of the National Guard, and, the wisdom of its erection was abundantly shown by the varied uses to which it was put, and the inestimable value that it was to the citizens and the civil and military authorities, during the trying times which followed the breaking out of the fire. The Mayor established his headquarters at the Armory and at once telegraphed to Olympia notifying the Governor of the condition of the city; stating the fact that the civil authorities were unable to preserve order and properly protect life and property without assistance of the Military force, and requested that I be authorized to use the troops at my command for that purpose. In response to this telegram the following order was received:

HEADQUARTERS FIRST REGIMENT, N. G. OF W.,
Seattle, Wash. June 6, 1889

SPECIAL ORDERS NO. 1

I. Col. J. C. Haines, Commanding, First Regiment, N. G. W., is authorized to place into service such troops of his Command as he may deem necessary.

II. Transportation and rations will be furnished by the Commanding Officer of the First Regiment.

MILES C. MOORE, COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF

BY OFFICIAL:

Paul D'Heirry,
Lt. Col. and A. I. G.

"Quartermaster Grant and Commissary Hatfield promptly reported to me for duty, the latter at once proceeded to make arrangements for furnishing meals to the members of my command and policemen engaged in guarding the city, and within a time, which, under the circumstances, was remarkably short, he had placed his department in perfect working order and was able to supply every want. During the time the Regiment was in service, the duties imposed upon Lieut. Hatfield were arduous, difficult and trying in the extreme. Not only was he charged with his proper duties as Commissary of the Regiment but later the Relief Committee requested he be detailed to take charge of the feeding of the multitudes of destitute, to whom meals were furnished free of charge at the Armory, During this period as many as nine thousand meals a day were furnished at all hours of the day and night. Lieut. Hatfield remained constantly on duty and discharged his trust with fidelity, thoroughness and skill which entitle him to the highest praise, and most profound gratitude on the part of those whom he served. Quartermaster Grant was also, in addition to his proper duties, detailed by me, at the request of the city authorities, to take charge of all property and supplies other than those belonging to the Quartermaster Department. The duties were most exacting and his responsibility great, but they were discharged most skillfully and conscientiously; and notwithstanding the confusion that prevailed for several days after the fire, not an article of property committed to his charge was lost or unaccounted for. Inasmuch as the fire destroyed every gun store in the city, there was a great lack of arms for special policemen, who to the number of two hundred and fifty had been appointed.

"The Commissary was but scantily provided with assistants in his department. The Mayor accordingly, during the evening of June 6th, issued the following notice:

NOTICE

LADIES ARE REQUESTED TO RENDER ASSISTANCE IN PREPARING MEALS FOR
MILITARY MEN AND OTHERS ENGAGED IN GUARDING THE CITY.
PROVISIONS WILL BE FURNISHED AT THE EXPENSE OF THE CITY.
PERSONS DESIRING TO RENDER ASSISTANCE WILL PLEASE REPORT TO THE ARMORY.
ALL PERSONS HAVING ARMS SUITABLE FOR POLICEMEN AND SPECIAL OFFICERS WILL
REPORT THAT FACT TO COL. J. C. HAINES, COMMANDER, AT THE ARMORY.
ALL ARMS WILL BE WELL TAKEN CARE OF AND RETURNED AFTER USE.

(SIGNED) ROBERT MORAN, MAYOR

"At the same time the following proclamation was issued:

PROCLAMATION

Seattle, June 6, 9 P. M.

ALL PERSONS FOUND ON THE STREETS AFTER 8 O'CLOCK P. M. WITHOUT THE PROPER COUNTERSIGN, WILL BE ARRESTED AND IMPRISONED.

ALL PERSONS FOUND STEALING OR OTHERWISE VIOLATING THE LAW WILL BE ARRESTED, AND, IF RESISTING ARREST, WILL BE SUMMARILY DEALT WITH.

ALL SALOONS ARE HEREBY ORDERED TO CLOSE, UNDER PENALTY OF A FORFEITURE OF LICENSE. NO PERSONS WILL BE ALLOWED TO SELL OR DISPOSE OF INTOXICATING LIQUORS WITHOUT FURTHER ORDERS.

ALL MILITIAMEN AND SPECIAL POLICEMEN ARE STRICTLY CHARGED TO ENFORCE THE ABOVE ADDRESS.

(SIGNED) ROBERT MORAN, MAYOR

"It was now evident, from the extent of the conflagration and the disastrous effects it had produced, that the Companies on duty did not furnish sufficient force for the guarding of the district where their services were necessary. As they were then all on duty and could not be relieved without calling into service additional troops, accordingly, at the request of the Mayor, I issued the following orders:

SEATTLE, JUNE 7, 1889

COMMANDING OFFICER, C COMPANY, FIRST REGIMENT, TACOMA, W. T .

UNLESS FURTHER ORDERS, YOU WILL PROCEED WITH YOUR COMPANY ON STEAMER FLEETWOOD TO SEATTLE, FRIDAY, WITH TWENTY ROUNDS OF AMMUNITION PER MAN.

BY ORDER, COL. J. C. HAINES, OFFICIAL

W. T. SHARPE, ADJUTANT

SEATTLE, JUNE 7, 1889

COMMANDING OFFICER, G COMPANY, FIRST REGIMENT, PORT BLAKELEY, W. T.

UNLESS FURTHER ORDERS, YOU WILL PROCEED WITH YOUR COMPANY, ON FRIDAY, AT 10 O'CLOCK A. M. TO SEATTLE, WITH TWENTY ROUNDS OF AMMUNITION PER MAN.

BY ORDER, COL. J. C. HAINES, OFFICIAL

W. T. SHARPE, ADJUTANT

"These orders were telegraphed to the respective stations of the Companies. The one directed to C Company reached Tacoma early in the morning of the 7th, and within two hours the company was ready to march. The other directed to G Company, owing to the breaking of the wire, did not reach them at all. A copy, however, was published in the POST-INTELLIGENCER of June 7th, and Captain Phillips, upon seeing it at Port Blakeley at about 10 o'clock on that day, immediately called his company together, took a special steamer and started for Seattle without waiting for any official communication on the subject. His prompt action certainly deserves honorable mention.

"Colonel G. Morris Haller, Chief of Staff of the Adjutant General, tendered his services to me on the evening of June 6th, and rendered valuable and efficient service as an Aide during that night. The night was clear and warm and the flames of the burning city lit up the streets for many blocks to the eastward. Sentries were stationed as far up as Fifth Street and along the entire length of the burnt district. Thousands of people were scattered over this tract of country homeless, and in most cases destitute of everything except the few goods which they had saved and beside which they lay. Goods of great value were scattered along through the streets without any guard except that afforded by the members of my

command. In several cases large quantities of liquor were piled up and apparently abandoned, but so vigilant were the sentries that not a single theft or other violation of the law was, so far as I can ascertain, reported during the night. When morning dawned and it became known that food could be obtained at the Armory, hundreds of people thronged there for it. The Armory was filled with people who slept there during the night, including in their numbers, many women and children. Tables were set in the drill hall of the Armory and all who applied for meals were provided with them under the direction of the Commissary. In order that all who needed food might be supplied, I, under direction of the Mayor caused the following notice to be printed and circulated through the city:

NOTICE

ALL WHO ARE IN NEED OF FOOD CAN HAVE THEIR IMMEDIATE WANTS SUPPLIED
AT THE FIRST REGIMENT ARMORY, ON UNION STREET.

J. C. HAINES, COLONEL COMMANDING

" During the morning of June 7th several steamers loaded with provisions which had been donated by the people of Tacoma, and during the afternoon a steamer load donated by the people of Port Townsend, arrived at Seattle and were taken charge of by the Commissary. These donations were most liberal and generous and were greatly needed, as the supply at the Commissary's disposal were very much depleted. Too much cannot be said in praise of the prompt generosity displayed by Seattle's sister cities in meeting the emergency. The city of Tacoma; in addition to most liberal donations both of money and supplies, sent a delegation of its leading citizens, who arrived on the 8th at Seattle, and immediately erected a large tent of which they took personal charge, and for nearly two weeks continued on duty affording food and lodging to all who applied, serving, during most of the time, from seven to nine thousand meals per day. At one o'clock in the afternoon Company C, Lieut. Walsh, Commanding, reported for duty at the Armory. Their arrival was greeted with great enthusiasm by the people, and they were immediately ordered to relieve a corresponding number of the members of the Seattle Companies who had been on duty continuously since 8 o'clock of the evening before. Captain Fife, who had come to Seattle as a member of a Tacoma Fire Company, and had been rendering most gallant and efficient service in that capacity, then assumed command. Shortly after this Company G, Captain Joseph Phillips, arrived and reported for duty and was at once detailed to relieve the remainder of the members of the Seattle Companies. The day was hot and breathless, at many of the posts the air was full of smoke and flying ashes, and the service performed by these Companies, extending as it did over a period of eighteen hours, was trying in the extreme. It was discharged, however, without complaint and in the most thorough and efficient manner. At about eleven o'clock in the morning of June 7th the Commander-in-Chief visited my headquarters at the Armory, having started on a special boat from Olympia as soon as he received news of the fire. He expressed his approbation of the measures already taken, and directed me to render the Mayor every assistance possible.

"The fire had practically burned itself out by the afternoon this day. It had devastated an area of at least one hundred and twenty acres, within which there was not one building standing; it had destroyed property of the value of at least \$15,000,000. The entire business part of the town was swept out of existence. The safes and vaults containing in the aggregate money and valuables aggregating millions were scattered through the district, and much valuable property lay among the ruins. It accordingly became necessary to place a strong guard through the burnt district. By order of the Mayor I stationed sentries through the burnt district and at its boundaries, with orders to admit no one during the day without a pass from my Headquarters, except police and firemen, and to admit no one during the night without the countersign.

"The extent of the territory thus guarded made the duty very arduous and taxed the resources of my Command to the utmost, but from the beginning to end it was performed with a fidelity and discretion that could not be excelled. The situation during this day was practically unchanged excepting in this, that a large number of vagabonds and professional criminals, attracted by the hope of plunder,

arrived. These, added to the numbers of the criminal class residing in the city before the fire, presented a constant menace to the property and lives of citizens. These men were to be found scattered through the woods and around the premises of private citizens, mingling, in many cases, with the thousands of working men who had been thrown out of employment and obtaining their food gratuitously at the public tables. On the morning of this day (7th), by Special Orders No. 17, I ordered Companies B, C, D and G into camp at the Armory and named the camp "Camp Moore" in honor of the Commander-in-Chief. I also established regular camp routine, which was strictly enforced up to the time my Command was relieved from duty. Company G was assigned quarters in the band room and Company C in the clubroom. Both were provided with cots and blankets from the Quartermaster's store. Positive orders were given to the officers and men of my Command to use every effort to prevent the liquor traffic and to arrest all persons engaged in the sale or transportation of liquor, and to seize and bring to the Headquarters all liquor found by them being so sold or transported. In pursuance to these orders a large quantity of liquor was seized and stored at Headquarters, and when my Command was relieved from duty the same was turned over to the city authorities. All persons arrested by members of my Command were at once turned over to the civil authorities for trial. In several cases liquor was found in the burnt district in barrels which had been tapped, and men were drinking it and becoming intoxicated. In every case the liquor was, under my orders, destroyed by knocking in the heads of the barrels and allowing it to escape. This I considered necessary in order to prevent drunkenness and consequent disorder. During the night all remained quiet in the burnt district and nothing of moment occurred. During the next day (June 8th) the situation remained unchanged. Large contributions of supplies kept pouring in and the Commissary was kept busy night and day supplying the hungry with meals. The Quartermaster had charge of the task of providing lodgings for those who applied and the Armory was filled with men, women and children who sought shelter there.

"Owing to the necessity for adjustment of insurance upon the stocks destroyed by fire, merchants were unwilling to remove or disturb their property until adjustment was had, therefore the necessity for guard duty continued as imperative as before. This state of affairs continued until the morning of the 11th of June. The Mayor on the evening of the 10th of June stated to me that the Chief of Police considered that he would be able to take charge of the city at eight o'clock on the following morning, that being the hour at which the sentries were relieved. Accordingly at that time the Guards were withdrawn and the entire Command assembled at the Armory, the Mayor having requested me to hold my Command in readiness for duty for the space of twenty-four hours. About eleven o'clock the Mayor called at my Headquarters and informed me that the burned district was overrun with people and that he feared that serious consequences might result. I accordingly proceeded with him to the burnt district and saw that the ruins were crowded with people, many of whom were engaged in purloining articles of value from the debris, and in some cases, as I afterwards ascertained, committed thefts of money and jewelry which they found in the ruins. Quite a number of property owners had commenced clearing away the foundations of their buildings but their work was almost entirely stopped, owing to the rush of people through the streets. The police endeavored in vain to restore order. Many lawless characters openly defied them, and a large number of prominent citizens demanded of the Mayor and myself that the Military be ordered back and that the district be cleared of all except those engaged in legitimate work within it.

"Many reproached the Mayor and myself for withdrawing the sentries and all united in demanding their return. The Mayor accordingly ordered me to clear the district of everyone who was not engaged in work or guarding or saving of their property within it, and, until his further orders, to prevent every one from entering without a pass. I hastened to the Armory and detailed Captain Kellogg with thirty men to clear the district in accordance with the Mayor's orders. I had previously stationed Lieut. Walsh, with eighteen men, as a reserve at the Boston Block on Second street, apprehending that trouble might arise and that his services would be needed. I rode immediately to his station, ordered him to place sentries at all avenues leading to the burnt district, and allow no one to enter without a pass. Captain Kellogg entered the burnt district at the north end throwing out a portion of his command as

skirmishers, and marched his reserve down Front street, driving before him all persons not exempted by the Mayor's orders. At this time there was a crowd of at least five thousand people within a radius of a dozen blocks in the heart of what had been the business part of the city. Many of them refused to move at the approach of the skirmishers, using insolent language and threats of resistance. Upon the approach, however, of the reserve they gave way, and upon seeing Lieut. Walsh with his men coming up Second street, at double time, they broke and many of them fled precipitately out of the burnt district and scattered along through Second and Third Streets. Within twenty minutes after the Mayor's orders was given the district was cleared, and sentries were posted and work was proceeding uninterruptedly within it. Captain Kellogg executed this movement with a great promptness and skill and thoroughly demonstrated the usefulness of a Military force in an emergency of this kind. On the 13th of June the Mayor called a meeting of prominent citizens and leading business men at my Headquarters for the purpose of discussing the question as to whether my Command should be relieved from further duty. I had informed the Mayor that the service was too severe to be continued longer without an addition to my force, and that if he desired me to keep troops longer in service it would be necessary for me to order the remaining company of the Regiment, Company H, stationed at Vancouver, to Seattle. Lieut. Col. Booge, Chief of your Staff, had informed me he thought it to be desirable to relieve the Seattle Companies from duty on account of the long and arduous service they had performed, and the further fact that their business interests had long been demanding their attention; that you would place at my command any number of companies of the two Regiments that might be necessary to fill their places. This fact I had communicated to the Mayor and told him that I desired to take immediate action if the troops were to remain on duty any longer. The meeting took place at four o'clock in the afternoon and was attended by most of the principal property owners in the city. The Chief of Police and the Mayor were also present. The Mayor stated the object of the meeting and the different gentlemen present gave their opinion upon the question involved, and each one expressed himself in the strongest terms as opposed to the removal of the Military for at least a week to come, many stating that in their opinion the presence of the National Guardsmen was all that prevented riot and disorder; that the police force was not properly organized and was unable to cope with the disturbing elements then in the city. The Chief of Police, at the same meeting, stated that he was reorganizing his force as rapidly as possible but at the time he had grave doubts as to his ability to preserve order in the city without the aid of the Military. The Mayor accordingly ordered me to remain on duty and to strengthen my Command so as to relieve in a measure the Companies then on duty as they were beginning to show the effects of the arduous service they were performing, by increasing sickness and disability. I accordingly issued the following orders:

HEADQUARTERS FIRST REGIMENT, NATIONAL GUARD OF WASH.
Camp Moore, Seattle, Washington, June 13, 1889

SPECIAL ORDERS NO. 20

- I. Company H, First Regiment, N. G. W., Captain Charles Hutscheck, Commanding, with twenty rounds of ammunition per man, will immediately upon receipt of this order, proceed to Seattle.
- II. No excuse will be accepted.
- III. Transportation will be furnished.

OFFICIAL:

BY ORDER OF COL. J. C. HAINES

W. J. SHARPE, FIRST LIEUT. AND ADJUTANT

"I telegraphed the same to Captain Hutscheck. I also wired C. H. Prescott, Esq., a Tacoma, Manager of the N. P. Railroad, requesting him to furnish them free transportation, as the territory had no funds available for that purpose.

"Mr. Prescott promptly replied proffering the transportation requested, and I wired Captain Hutscheck to that effect. "

"I also, in view of the increased force to be at my command and the possibility of an emergency arising for its use, made a requisition by telegraph to the Adjutant General for one thousand rounds of

ammunition. Captain Hutscheck, owing to the fact that the members of his Command were widely scattered, was unable to assemble them in time to proceed to Seattle until the evening of the 14th. The car was furnished his Command by the N. P. Railroad company, and he reported for duty with thirty four men at half past ten o'clock on the morning of the 15th. On the evening of the 13th, at about midnite, the sentry who was stationed in the rear of the Safe Deposit Building, discovered a man approaching him from the bay. There was a large pile of debris at this point and the man had evidently been concealed behind it, as he rose suddenly into view of the sentry. The latter challenged him but no attention was paid to the challenge and the man advanced rapidly towards the sentry, who, receiving no reply to his repeated challenges, fired at the man who immediately sprang or fell back to the shore of the bay. The alarm was promptly given and diligent search made but no trace was discovered of the person who had been fired at. This building, during the entire period the Regiment was on duty, contained a large amount of money and valuables, it being the only vault in the city which had escaped the fire uninjured. The funds of the several banks were kept there at night and the deposit boxes were filled with money, jewelry and valuables. It was estimated that the money of the banks alone in this vault amounted to over one million dollars, while the money and valuables of private individuals, it was estimated, amounted in value to four or five millions more. In view of the importance of this post, I caused extra guards to be kept about it day and night and imposed the strictest vigilance on the sentries.

Rumors were caused about organized attempts to blow up the vaults and sack them. On the evening of June 14th, at about 9:30 o'clock P. M., a pistol shot was fired near the corner of Third and Washington streets, which, from circumstances seemed to be directed at the sentry stationed there. Careful examination however, failed to disclose the identity of the person firing it. At 1:30 A. M. of the following morning a man was seen proceeding rapidly in the direction of the Safe Deposit Building, crossing Mill Street and coming up Post Street. The sentry challenged him but no attention being paid to the challenge, further than the man proceeding on a run towards the sentry in the rear of the building, the sentry first challenging him, who was stationed on Mill street, fired. The man refusing to halt, he immediately loaded and fired again when the man disappeared near the locality where the man who had been fired at on the preceding night had vanished from view.

"Immediately after the meeting of business men held at the Regiment's Headquarters to which I have already referred, I called the company commanders of the companies then on duty together and stated to them you had placed at my disposal such force from the Second Regiment as might be needed to relieve any or all of the other companies from duty; that in my opinion the services performed by their companies, particularly the Seattle companies who were so severely affected by the fire and whose business interests demanded their attention, was all that could be properly exacted of them, and that, therefore, I would within the next thirty-six hours relieve from duty such companies as might desire relief, supplying their places with companies from the Second Regiment, subject to your approval. Every one of the company commanders asserted that with the assistance of Company H, their several companies could and would discharge all duties that might be required of any military force in the city; that every man much preferred to remain on duty and under no circumstances would be willing to be removed from it. On the morning of the 16th the Mayor stated to me that he thought it probably would be necessary to keep the troops on duty for another week, and that he thought it would be better to relieve the Seattle companies and supply their places with companies from the Second Regiment, who would be fresh and whose business interests would not suffer as much as those of the local companies. I accordingly communicated with you by telegraph desiring to know whether the companies could be sent for that purpose, and also communicated with Mr. Prescott requesting transportation for them if they should be ordered into service. The latter promptly replied tendering free transportation for such companies as might be ordered here. On the same day I received from you a telegram notifying me that Company G would be ready to move on thirty minute's notice; that you had telegraphed Col. Pike to designate the other company, but that the order to move must come from the Commander-in-Chief. I accordingly, telegraphed Gov. Moore requesting him to give you authority to send two companies from the Second Regiment here, if no expense should thereby be incurred the Territory for transportation. On

the morning of the 16th the Commander-in-Chief wired me he was arranging to send Companies A and F but that they could not arrive before Tuesday. I also on the same day received a telegram from General Curry to the effect that Governor Moore had authorized the Spokane and Walla Walla companies to come to Seattle and had also arranged transportation. The telegram also gave hearty assurances of aid in every possible way. I accordingly informed the company commanders of the Seattle companies that I had arranged to relieve them with two companies from eastern Washington; that they would probably be on duty for a week, that I felt it would be unjust to keep them in service any longer under the circumstances.

"This statement met with most earnest protest on the part of the officers to whom it was made. They informed me that their men were improving in health, that since the arrival of Company H the guard duty had been much less severe and that they would regret exceedingly to see their places supplied by others. That the duty was considered to be an honorable one in the highest degree, and that as long as they were willing and capable they should not be deprived of the opportunity to perform it. Under these circumstances I deemed it best for the interests of the regiment to refrain from calling in other companies and accordingly wired both the Commander-in-Chief and yourself to that effect. On the 15th of June Adjutant General O'Brien visited the camp. I had previously learned that 250 stand of arms had been shipped to the Governor at Olympia via Seattle. Five companies of the regiment were armed with .45 caliber Springfield rifles, some of the model of 1873 and some of 1878. The armament, however, was not complete, there being quite a number of men who were obliged to borrow rifles in order to do guard duty. Moreover, the rifles were many of them in bad repair and unreliable in action. Company G were armed with the old .50 caliber Springfield rifles which were almost worthless for service. I accordingly wired the Commander-in-Chief that in my judgment the interests of the companies demanded the retention of the guns at Seattle and their issuance here. To this the Governor had replied that he had ordered the arms sent here. When General O'Brien visited the camp on the 15th he informed me he had brought with him 40 stands of arms which he intended issuing to Company G. I informed him of the condition of the arms in possession of the regiment, and insisted that we should have for service in the field, the best weapons that the Territory could furnish the regiment. With this in view he coincided and ordered 160 additional stand shipped to Seattle and as soon as they arrived they were issued to the various companies as equitably as possible.

* * * * *

Seattle, June 18th, 1889

COL. J. C. HAINES, COMMANDING FIRST REGIMENT, N. G. W.

Sir: Inasmuch as the civil authorities are now able to preserve the peace and enforce the laws in the city of Seattle, and no further necessity seems to exist for the employment of a military force to assist them in so doing, I request you to withdraw your sentries from the burnt district at 8 o'clock A. M. June 19th, 1889, and to hold your Command at the First Regiment Armory subject to call for the space of twenty-four hours thereafter, and in case no necessity arises during that time for the use of such force, you are at liberty to relieve them from duty.

In case any necessity should arise for the use of more force than is at the disposal of the city authorities for the preservation of the peace, during said twenty-four hours, you are authorized and requested to use the force at your command for the purpose of preserving the peace and enforcing the laws.

ROBERT MORAN, MAYOR

"Pursuant to the foregoing the following order was issued:

HEADQUARTERS, FIRST REGIMENT, NATIONAL GUARD OF WASHINGTON
Camp Moore, Seattle, Washington, June 18th, 1889

GENERAL ORDERS NO. 11

The Guard now on duty will be relieved at 8 o'clock A. M. of June 19th, 1889, and march to the Armory. No Guard will be detailed for that day, except the usual Sentries, in and about the Armory.

The Quartermaster will, as soon as the Guard is relieved, cause the Guard tents and cots and blankets used by the Guard to be returned to the Armory and stored.

BY ORDER OF COLONEL HAINES :

OFFICIAL:

W. T. SHARP, FIRST LIEUTENANT AND ADJUTANT

* * * * *

HEADQUARTERS, FIRST REGIMENT, NATIONAL GUARD OF WASHINGTON
Camp Moore, Seattle, Washington, June 19th, 1889

GENERAL ORDERS NO. 12

I. The troops of this Command will make the necessary arrangements to break camp at 12 M, June 20th, 1889, from which date the troops will be withdrawn from active service in the field, and Camp Moore will be discontinued.

II. Special permission is granted Company G to proceed to its station at Port Blakeley at 7 A. M., same date.

III. Lieutenant Grant, Quartermaster, will furnish the necessary transportation for Company C to Tacoma and Company H to Vancouver, W. T.

IV. Such companies having had blankets issued to them at this Camp will turn the same over to the Quartermaster, and such Companies not previously provided will be allowed to retain one blanket per man.

V. The Commanding Officer desires to express his sincere appreciation of the services rendered by the members of this Command since and during the Seattle fire. Those services have been at all times arduous and difficult and often dangerous and have required in most cases great personal sacrifices, but they have in every instance been performed with a fidelity, discretion and gallantry which have received universal commendation and constitute the brightest page in the history of the National Guard of the United States that has been written since the Civil War.

VI. The several Companies of this Regiment will hold themselves in readiness at their respective stations to report for service upon receipt of orders at a moment's notice.

BY ORDER OF COLONEL HAINES:

OFFICIAL:

W. T. SHARPE, FIRST LIEUT AND ADJUTANT

The foregoing order was read at a Dress Parade held on the University grounds on the evening of the 19th of June, 1889. At 12 M, June, 20, 1889, Camp Moore was discontinued and the troops returned to their respective stations.

REPORT OF CAPTAIN CHARLES HUTSCHECK
ON FIRE AT VANCOUVER, W. T.

Vancouver, W. T. June 25, 1889

To: THE ADJUTANT GENERAL, N. G. W., OLYMPIA, W. T.

Sir: I have the honor to report, in compliance with letter from your office, that a fire having broke out at about two A. M. Saturday June 22nd in this city, my Company went on duty guarding the property that was saved from the burning buildings.

I wired the Governor and received orders to go on duty for, such time as the Mayor of the city should see fit. I accordingly posted sentinels in the burnt district on Saturday, Saturday night and Sunday until noon, at which time the Mayor thought the Marshal and his deputies could take complete control of the city.

The men turned out promptly when called and performed all duties in a very satisfactory manner. There was no disturbance at any time and the only danger was from petty thieves.

My Company will be unable to attend any encampment this summer, owing to the tour of duty it has already had. I am sir, very respectfully,

Your obedient servant,

CHARLES HUTSCHECK, 1ST REGT, N. G. W.

REPORT OF GENERAL A. P. CURRY:
ON FIRE AT SPOKANE FALLS, W. T.

GENERAL HEADQUARTERS
NATIONAL GUARD OF WASHINGTON,
Adj. Gen. Office, Olympia, W. T. Aug 4, 1889

SPECIAL ORDERS

NO. 4 1/2

Pending the present disastrous conflagration at Spokane Falls, General A. P. Curry, commanding the First Brigade, N. G. W, will order such troops of the Second Regiment as he may deem necessary for the preservation of life and property of the citizens of said city, to report to him forthwith, and he will at once tender the services of said troops to the Mayor of said city for the purpose indicated in this order.

BY ORDER OF THE COMMANDER IN CHIEF

R. G. O'BRIEN, ADJUTANT GENERAL

HEADQUARTERS, FIRST BRIGADE, NATIONAL GUARD OF WASH.
Spokane Falls, Wash., August 30th, 1889

Brigadier General R. G. O'Brien, Adjutant General. N. G. W.

Sir: In compliance with Special Order No. 4 1/2, bearing date of August 4th, received by me from General Headquarters (a copy, of which I append) I have the honor to report the operations and services of the officers and men of the National Guard ordered to active duty, at Spokane Falls by me, in pursuance of said special order.

"When the order was received the beautiful city of Spokane Falls was in flames. Her noble business blocks, the pride of her citizens, were crumbling to atoms before the intense heat. The wildest confusion and disorder prevailed. The lawless element, which unfortunately forms a part of the population of every prosperous city in the Northwest, in the excitement of this great calamity were unrestrained by fear of the law. The police force of the municipal government, although as efficient as of any city in Washington, was by its limited numbers, entirely inadequate to perform the multiplicity of duties which were imposed upon it. Valuable property was abandoned with reckless indifference in order to save life.

"It was amid such scenes as these which may be imagined but not described, that I was ordered to call into active service the National Guard; not to take, but to save life; not to confiscate the enemy's

property, but to preserve the possessions of our friends and fellow citizens and to assist in maintaining law and order.

"Captain J. F. Hemingway, upon my order, reported for duty with his entire command; also Lieutenant Colonel Waters and First Lieutenant J. J. White, of my staff, and First Lieutenant E. J. Fellows, Commissary on the staff of Colonel Pike, Second Regiment, N. G. W. After assembling of the command, I reported to Mayor Fred Furth for orders, whereupon he instructed to take entire charge of the city and surroundings and guard the same, as in my judgment it required, asking me to take full control of everything and that he and the police force would assist and act on my suggestions. During the fourteen days and nights we were on duty, we found him ever ready and willing to assist the National Guard, and at the close of our services he fully appreciated the good we had done and complimented the force for its services. The National Guard of Washington, and especially that portion of it on duty in Spokane, will ever remember him as a true friend who appreciated the efforts of the officers and men, who were indeed untiring in their labors and unceasing in their vigilance to aid the municipal officers. Major Green, of the second Regiment, Major J. Kennedy Stout, of the Governor's staff, and Assistant Adjutant General Booge, of my staff, also rendered me valuable aid. A cordon of troops was placed about the burnt district, which covered an area of twenty blocks. As this patrol had to be maintained day and night, I found that the force of the National Guard was too small to adequately perform the duty, and I called for volunteers from the Posts of the G. A. R. at Spokane Falls. Forty of these noble veterans responded to my call, and these with the officers and members of the National Guard for fourteen days and nights performed the efficient and arduous duty of guarding the valuable property contained in safes and vaults, prevented spoilation and plunder by the disreputable characters who infested the town, preserved order and assisted in every way at the time of general distress. Tents were obtained for the officers and men of the National Guard and volunteers from the G. A. R. Posts, and strict and perfect camp discipline prevailed during the entire time. Rations were furnished upon my requisition from the relief tent provided by the municipal authorities.

"It would be invidious for me to make personal commendation of aid and service at a time when everyone did their utmost. The conduct of the soldiers of the National Guard was characterized by close attention to duty, efficiency and untiring vigilance. The members of my own staff and other officers mentioned herein were ready for active work both day and night, and the citizens of Spokane Falls owe them a debt of gratitude which it will be hard to repay. I cannot close this report, however, without special reference to the services of Lt. Col. Waters, 1st Lt. White, and 1st Lt. E. J. Fellows. Too much credit cannot be given to their prompt and efficient work and the active part taken by them on this occasion."

I have the honor to be, your obedient servant,

A. P. CURRY, BRIG. GEN., COMDG.

REPORT OF COLONEL JOSEPH GREENE
ON LABOR TROUBLES IN KING COUNTY
HEADQUARTERS FIRST REGIMENT INFANTRY, FIRST
BRIGADE, NATIONAL GUARD OF WASHINGTON,

Seattle, January 23, 1892

TO HIS EXCELLENCY GOVERNOR ELISHA P. FERRY, COMMANDER IN CHIEF, N. G. W,
OLYMPIA.

Sir - I have the honor to submit the following report of the movements of the several companies of the First Regiment, National Guard of Washington, in service during the mining troubles in King County in the months of June and July, 1891. Delay in making this report was caused -

FIRST: By the refusal until recently of the commander-in-chief to recognize these companies as being in the service of the State.

SECOND: The death of Colonel J. C. Haines, who commanded the troops at that time.

On the 24th day of June, 1891, there was a large body of armed men riotously assembled at Gilman, in King County, and threatened to destroy the buildings and machinery connected with the operation of the coal mines there. The sheriff of the county being absent, the manager of the mine applied to the deputy sheriff for a sufficient force to protect it from injury and destruction, but the deputy declined to act in the absence of the sheriff. The manager requested Colonel Haines to order out troops from his regiment for that purpose. This he refused to do. The manager then requested Colonel Haines whether, if the sheriff should call upon him for troops, to act as a posse comitatus, he would furnish them. Colonel Haines declined to act without orders from you, but at the request of the manager of the mine sent you the following telegram:

SEATTLE, June 24, 1891

GOVERNOR E. P. FERRY, OLYMPIA HOTEL:

I AM INFORMED THAT A RIOT HAS OCCURRED AT GILMAN, AND THE DESTRUCTION OF MINE PROPERTY IS THREATENED NOW BY ARMED MEN. THE SHERIFF IS AT WALLA WALLA. HIS DEPUTY HERE DECLINES TO ACT FOR WANT OF AUTHORITY. THE OWNERS OF THE MINE HAVE APPEALED TO ME FOR PROTECTION. I HAVE REFUSED UNTIL PROPERLY ORDERED. IF THE SHERIFF REQUESTS ME TO SEND TROOPS TO USE AS A POSSE, CAN I DO IT WITHOUT ORDERS FROM YOU? SEE SECTION 860 OF THE CODE AND ELA vs SMITH, 5 Gray, 121. I AM INFORMED THAT THE SITUATION IS CRITICAL, AND THAT LOSS OF LIFE AND PROPERTY ARE LIKELY UNLESS PROMPT ACTION IS TAKEN.

COLONEL J. C. HAINES

"And received in reply the following: "

OLYMPIA, June 25, 1891

COLONEL J. C. HAINES, COMMANDING FIRST REGIMENT, N. G. W., SEATTLE

IF ANY OFFICER MENTIONED IN SECTION 860 OF THE CODE OF WASHINGTON CALLS FOR AN ARMED FORCE TO SUPPRESS A RIOT OR TO ENFORCE THE EXECUTION OF THE LAWS AT GILMAN, IN KING COUNTY. YOU WILL IMMEDIATELY REPAIR TO THAT PLACE WITH ONE OR MORE COMPANIES OF THE N. G. W. AS YOU MAY DEEM ADVISABLE, AND RENDER SUCH AID TO THE CIVIL AUTHORITIES AS MAY BE NECESSARY.

ELISHA P. FERRY, GOVERNOR

"On the evening, the 27th day of June, 1891, a riot occurred at the town of Franklin, in King County, which resulted in a battle between the striking miners and the negroes who had been brought in to take their places, and in which two men were killed and several wounded. The deputy at that point was unable to quell the riot, or disperse the mob, and the conflict ceased only on account of the approach of darkness, and it was evidently their intention to resume the conflict on the following day.

"The deputy sheriff telegraphed Colonel Haines, at Seattle, requesting him to order immediately to Franklin one or more companies of his regiment to assist the civil authorities in preserving the peace. This telegram was received by Colonel Haines at about half past ten in the evening, of June 28th. He immediately issued the following order:

HEADQUARTERS, FIRST REGIMENT INFANTRY, N. G. W.

Seattle, June 28, 1891

SPECIAL ORDER NO 12:

1. Captain Green, commanding B company, of this regiment, and Captain Allen, commanding D company, will proceed immediately to Franklin having companies in heavy marching order, with forty rounds of ammunition per man.

2. Transportation will be furnished.
3. Commissary J. A. Hatfield will furnish subsistence.
4. The surgeon of the regiment will accompany the command and report immediately at these headquarters.

BY ORDER OF COLONEL J. C. HAINES
OFFICIAL: CHARLES ESPLIN, JR., FIRST LIEUTENANT AND ADJUTANT

"HE SENT YOU THE FOLLOWING TELEGRAM:"

SEATTLE, June 28, 1891

ELISHA P. FERRY

I have received a request from a deputy sheriff to send a company of the National Guard to Franklin immediately, he expecting a riot at any moment, Several persons have been shot. I have ordered a company there and will accompany them. I have no specified orders from you except for Gilman. If my action is not approved, wire me at Franklin.

J. C. HAINES

"No reply was received to the above message".

"The members of these companies were scattered throughout the city, and it was only by the exercise of the utmost diligence that they were assembled at the armory before midnight. As soon as a sufficient number of these companies were assembled to constitute one company available for duty, he proceeded with them at once to Franklin, arriving there at daybreak. The arrival and presence of the troops at Franklin, prevented any further outbreak at that point, it being necessary, however, to keep a force there until July 15th.

"On June 30th, the threatened riot at Gilman occurred, and the sheriff after endeavoring in vain to quell it, requested Colonel Haines to send two companies of his regiment to that place, for the purpose of assisting the civil authorities in preserving peace, maintaining order and preventing the destruction of life and property. This he immediately did, transferring Company D from Franklin, and ordering Company E of Seattle to that point. They arrived at Gilman on the morning of July 1st, and reported to the sheriff's deputy, and remained on duty until the 13th of July, preventing by their presence any further riotous demonstrations.

At the towns of Franklin, New Castle, Black Diamond and Gilman, in King County there are large and valuable coal mines, the operation of which constitutes one of the principal industries of the state; strikes had occurred at these points and work in consequence was suspended. The miners refused to work, except on their own terms, and refused to allow anyone else to work them at all, while the owners of the mines would not accept the terms insisted upon by the miners, and were endeavoring at Franklin, Newcastle and Gilman to work the mines with other laborers. The miners in order to prevent the operation of the mines, except on their own terms, organized military companies at these places, and armed them with rifles and shotguns, and supplied them with ammunition. These companies were daily drilled and paraded under arms, and were used as a constant menace for the purpose of preventing the operation of the mines in any way, except upon the terms insisted upon by the miners. In consequence of the employment of these methods by the miners the owners of the coal mines at Gilman and Black Diamond were unable to work their mines at all, and at New Castle and Franklin were able to work them only by the maintenance of a large body of armed men, employed and paid by them. These military organizations, which were entirely unauthorized by law, were a constant menace to the public peace, and caused great terror and alarm among the people in those towns who were not sympathizers with the striking miners, and on July 2d, 1891, Colonel Haines received the following telegram from you:

OLYMPIA, July 2, 1891

COL. J. C. HAINES, FRANKLIN:

THE CIVIL AUTHORITIES SHOULD DISARM ALL UNAUTHORIZED ARMED BODIES AT FRANKLIN, GILMAN AND ELSEWHERE IN KING COUNTY WHERE THERE IS DANGER OF A RIOT OR BREACH OF THE PEACE. YOU WILL RENDER ALL NECESSARY ASSISTANCE TO THE CIVIL AUTHORITIES IN THAT DIRECTION. AFTER DISARMAMENT THE SHERIFF AND DEPUTIES WILL PROBABLY BE ABLE TO PRESERVE THE PEACE, AND THE PRESENCE OF THE MILITIA WILL NO LONGER BE REQUIRED. A REQUEST FOR VOLUNTARY DISARMAMENT BY ALL THE PARTIES SHOULD BE MADE BEFORE ACTIVE MEASURES ARE TAKEN.

ELISHA P. FERRY, GOVERNOR

"He, not deeming the force at his disposal sufficient to carry out your orders, in reply sent you the following telegram:

GILMAN, July 2, 1891

HON. ELISHA P. FERRY:

DOES YOUR ORDER OF TODAY, RELATIVE TO DISARMING ARMED BODIES, ALLOW ME TO USE, IF NECESSARY FOR ITS ENFORCEMENT WITHOUT BREACH OF THE PEACE, ANY COMPANIES OF THIS REGIMENT OTHER THAN THOSE NOW IN THE FIELD?

J. C. HAINES

"To which he received the following answer:

OLYMPIA, July 2, 1891

COLONEL J. C. HAINES, FRANKLIN:

YOU CAN USE ALL THE FIRST REGIMENT FOR THE PURPOSES INDICATED IN MY DISPATCH OF THIS MORNING, IF NECESSARY.

ELISHA P. FERRY, GOVERNOR

"The sheriff of the county, for the purpose of carrying out your order contained in your first telegram, on July 2d, requested Colonel Haines to send a company to New Castle, one to Black Diamond and one to Franklin; there being but one company at the latter place, company D having been transferred to Gilman.

"On July 2d Colonel Haines accordingly telegraphed Captain Fife, commanding company C at Tacoma, as follows, sending also a copy of the same message to Capt. Shank, commanding company G (also Tacoma):

SEATTLE, July 2, 1891

CAPTAIN W. J. FIFE, COMMANDING C COMPANY, FIRST REGIMENT, N. G. W, TACOMA
PROCEED IMMEDIATELY WITH YOUR COMPANY TO BLACK DIAMOND, KING COUNTY, VIA SEATTLE, AND THERE GO INTO CAMP AND AWAIT ORDERS. YOUR COMMAND WILL BE IN HEAVY MARCHING ORDER, WITH ALL AMMUNITION YOU HAVE. MAKE REQUISITION ON ADJUTANT GENERAL FOR SUCH TENTS AS YOU REQUIRE, ALSO FOR AMMUNITION REQUIRED, NOT EXCEEDING FIFTEEN HUNDRED ROUNDS WITH WHAT YOU HAVE. WIRE ANSWER AT GILMAN, WIRE ADJUTANT HERE AND REPORT TO HIM AT ARMORY.

COLONEL J. C. HAINES

"These companies arrived in Seattle at daybreak on the morning of the 3rd. Company I, of Port Townsend, happened to be in Seattle for the purpose of attending a drill, and Colonel Haines issued the following order:

HEADQUARTERS, FIRST REGIMENT INFANTRY, N. G. W.

SPECIAL ORDER NO. 13:

Seattle, July 3, 1891

1. Company C, in command of Captain Fife, will proceed to Black Diamond; Company G, in command of Captain Shank, to New Castle, establishing camp at these points, and await further orders.
2. Company I, in command of Captain Jones, will proceed at once, to Franklin, and there report to Captain Green for orders.
3. Major Gaus will accompany company I to Franklin, and then proceed to New Castle, thence returning on the same train to Gilman and report to the commanding officer at that point.
4. Sergeant Major Younkin, stationed at Franklin, may at once report at Gilman.
5. Captain C. L. F. Kellogg will immediately report at the armory for duty as Quartermaster.

BY ORDER OF COLONEL HAINES:

Official: Chas. Esplin, Jr., First Lieutenant and Adjutant.

* * * * *

"Troop B, first cavalry battalion, arrived in Seattle on the evening of the 3rd of July, intending to participate in a parade on the following day, and the following order was issued by General Curry to Captain Ashton, commanding the Troop,

HEADQUARTERS, FIRST BRIGADE, NGW

SPECIAL ORDERS NO. 3:

Seattle, July 4, 1891

Captain J. M. Ashton, of Troop B, will report to Colonel J. C. Haines, at Seattle, with such of his command and officers as may be required for picket and scouting duty.

A. P. CURRY, BRIG. GEN., COMDG, N. G. W.

"Immediately upon the receipt of which Colonel Haines issued the following order:

HEADQUARTERS FIRST REGIMENT INFANTRY, NGW

Seattle, July 4th. 1891

SPECIAL ORDER NO. 14.

1. Captain Ashton, commanding troop B, will immediately proceed with twelve men of his command, mounted and equipped for service in the field for New Castle. He will there station three enlisted men and one non-commissioned officer and will then proceed with the balance of his detail to Gilman and report to Major Gaus for further orders.
2. Captain C. L. F. Kellogg, quartermaster, will accompany Captain Ashton to New Castle and furnish transportation.

BY ORDER OF COLONEL HAINES

Official: Chas. Esplin, Jr., First Lieutenant and Adjutant.

* * * * *

"In compliance with your instructions contained in your telegram of July 2d, to render assistance to the civil authorities in disarming all unauthorized armed bodies in King County, Colonel Haines issued a circular letter to the owners of the mines at Franklin, Black Diamond, New Castle and Gilman, of which the following is a copy:

Seattle, July 4th, 1891

TO THE OREGON IMPROVEMENT COMPANY, FRANKLIN:

As the officer in immediate command of the state troops now in the field, I am instructed by the sheriff of this county to notify you that there is a force of state troops now stationed at Gilman sufficient to protect the property of your company located there, and to insure the safety of your employees. I am assured by the Governor and the Brigadier General, commanding this Brigade, that such force will be maintained until the civil authorities are able to afford the same protection now given by the military arm of the state. I therefore request you to remove from Gilman on or before twelve o'clock noon of the

6th day of July, 1891, all guards and armed men stationed or maintained at that place by you or under your authority, on the ground that it is prejudicial to good order that while the responsibility is cast upon the civil authorities and the National Guard, their duties be shared by any body of men not acting under authority of the law.

Very respectfully yours. J. C. HAINES, COL, 1ST REGT, NGW

"Colonel Haines also issued the following order:

HEADQUARTERS, FIRST REGIMENT INFANTRY, NGW
Seattle, July 6, 1891

SPECIAL ORDER NO. 17:

1. Inasmuch as the owners of the coal mines at the several stations of the troops of this command now in the field have been requested at twelve o'clock noon on the 6th day of July, 1891, to remove from their property all guards and armed men now maintained by them or under their authority, and inasmuch as it is probable that this request will be complied with, and inasmuch as this request has been made upon the ground that the force of the state troops now at such points as is sufficient to insure the safety of the property and persons at such mines, the post commanders at Franklin, Black Diamond, New Castle, and Gilman, will obey carefully the following, instructions:

FIRST: They will keep in mind the elementary maxim that the military is always subordinate to the civil power of the state.

SECOND: They will never act unless it be in self defense except upon the request or with the approval of the sheriff, or deputy sheriff stationed at the posts at which such post commander may be, but will always act promptly upon receiving a request to do so from such authority.

THIRD: They will dispose their guards in such a manner as to afford protection to the property, lives and liberty of all persons within the limit of their post, and will to the extent of their ability preserve peace and good order at all times within such limits; they will allow no interference by violence, intimidation or manifestations of force of persons lawfully employed either upon their own property or the property of their employers.

FOURTH: In the use of the National Guard for the protection of property, post commanders must remember that the troops under their command are not to take the place of private watchmen such as are ordinarily employed for the protection of property from fire or other injury incident to the ordinary condition of affairs, but that any persons within the limits of their post has the right to maintain such watchmen in the usual and ordinary manner.

These instructions, however, must not be construed so as to allow the employment or maintenance of any body of armed men, or to allow the carrying or display of arms or the use of the same in such manner as to create public disturbance or tend to a breach of the peace.

2. In case of any doubt in their minds as to the question of their authority or powers, or any uncertainty as to the meaning and import of these instructions, they will communicate by telegraph to the commanding officer of the regiment.

BY ORDER OF COLONEL HAINES:

OFFICIAL: Chas. Esplin, Jr., First Lieut. and Adjutant.

* * * * *

"Captain Fife was directed to send ten men and a sergeant from Black Diamond to New Castle to strengthen the force at that point. "

"On this date Captain Fife reported that the Black Diamond miners had met and consented to disband and turn over their arms to the sheriff. Later he wired that the miners' committee had reported to him that they could not get any satisfaction from their men until they ascertained, that the Oregon Improvement Company has turned overall their arms first. On the same day Captain J. Green, commanding the company at Franklin; wired that the Oregon Improvement Company had turned in thirty-eight carbines, sixteen revolvers and five rifles; strikers and citizens' twenty-eight guns and rifles.

"On July 10th, everything being quiet at Black Diamond, and in order to relieve Companies D and E from duty at Gilman, Colonel Haines issued the following order transferring company C from Black Diamond to that point, the same order also relieving company B from duty at Franklin:

HEADQUARTERS, FIRST REGIMENT INFANTRY, N. G. W.
Seattle July 10, 1891

SPECIAL ORDER NO. 24:

1. Captain Fife, now stationed at Black Diamond, will proceed with his command by the 12:50 P. M. train, on July 11th, 1891, and all baggage except tents and commissary equipments and supplies, to Gilman by way of Seattle. Upon his arrival at Seattle he will report to Lieut. J. A. Hatfield at the armory.
2. Upon his arrival at Gilman he will report to the commanding officer of the regiment, and await orders.
3. Company B of this regiment, now stationed at Franklin, will, on Sunday, July 12th, 1891, at 3:55 o'clock P. M., be relieved from duty until further orders, and will on that date proceed to Seattle.
4. Company D and E of this regiment, now stationed at Gilman, will on Sunday, July 12th, 1891, at 3:55 o'clock P. M., be relieved from duty until further orders, and will on that date proceed to Seattle.
5. Captain Joseph Green will remain on duty at Franklin as commander of that post until further orders.
6. The quartermaster will furnish necessary transportation.
7. The commissary will furnish necessary subsistence.

BY ORDER OF COLONEL HAINES:

OFFICIAL: CHAS ESPLIN, JR., FIRST LIEUT. AND ADJUTANT

On the same date the following telegram was received:

BLACK DIAMOND July 10th, 1891

COLONEL J. C. HAINES, GILMAN:

THE POWDER HOUSE AT CLAY MINE WAS BROKEN OPEN LAST NIGHT AND FOUR KEGS OF POWDER AND A LARGE QUANTITY OF DYNAMITE TAKEN THEREFROM.

W. J. FIFE

"He immediately wired the commanding officers at Franklin, New castle and Gilman to carefully guard explosives at their posts, and notifying them of the fact that the Clay mine had been broken into and to be prepared to meet any attempt to wreck the mines.

"Then followed the following orders:

HEADQUARTERS FIRST REGIMENT INFANTRY, N. G. W.
Camp Gilman, Gilman, July 12th, 1891

SPECIAL ORDERS NO. 25:

1. Captain W. J. Fife with his command will go into camp at Camp Gilman upon their arrival here, and will remain at that post until further orders.
2. During the absence of the regimental commander from Camp Gilman, Captain W. J. Fife will act as commander for the post.
3. Captain Ashton, commanding troop B, will have the management of his command in all matters connected with camp routine, and the details of scouting and picket duty, to which he has been assigned. All orders heretofore issued from these headquarters regarding him and his command will remain in full force, but his command will be subject to the orders of the post commander for tactical purposes and field duty.
4. The post commander will, until further orders, during the day maintain the sentries at the upper and lower gates of the coal mines, and will, at guard mount on the evening of each day, detail six men and one corporal or sergeant, and will report to Captain Ashton for sentry duty until relieved on the

morning of the following day. All sentries, when stationed at the coal mines, to be subject to Capt. Ashton's orders.

5. No passes will be issued to anyone to pass through the lines at the coal mines, but all members of the command will be allowed to pass the sentries after six o'clock in the morning, and before eight o'clock in the evening, without passes or countersign.

6. The post commander will honor any requisition that Captain Ashton may make for additional guards or sentries, in case of necessity, such detail to be subject to Captain Ashton's orders.

BY ORDER OF COLONEL HAINES:

OFFICIAL CHAS. ESPLIN, JR, FIRST LIEUT. AND ADJUTANT

HEADQUARTERS FIRST REGIMENT INFANTRY, N. G. W.

Camp Gilman, Gilman, July 12, 1891

SPECIAL ORDERS NO. 26:

1. Company I, Captain George H. Jones, commanding, stationed at Franklin, will on July 14th, 1891, break camp and proceed to Port Townsend, by way of Seattle on the 12:50 P. M. train, with all baggage including tents.

2. Captain, Jones, with his command, will report to Lieutenant Hatfield at the armory at Seattle upon his arrival.

3. Captain Joseph Green, post commander at Franklin, will turn over to the sheriff or deputy sheriff in charge of Franklin, all arms and ammunition delivered to him for safe keeping, taking a receipt for the same from the officer to whom they may be delivered; he will then be relieved from further duty as post commander,

4. The quartermaster will furnish necessary transportation.

5. The commissary will furnish necessary subsistence.

BY ORDER OF COLONEL J. C. HAINES

OFFICIAL:

SPECIAL ORDERS NO. 27 - Seattle July 14, 1891

1. Lieutenant Bamber with his command, (part of Troop B) stationed at Coal Creek will report forthwith to Captain Ashton, at Gilman for orders.

2. Before leaving Coal Creek, they will strike their tents and pack the same ready for transportation.

3. Major Gaus will furnish a sufficient detail to take charge of the tents and will hold the same subject to the order of the quartermaster.

SPECIAL ORDERS NO. 28 - Seattle, July 14, 1891

1. Captain Ashton with his command, at Gilman, will on the 15th day of July 1891, proceed with all baggage, except tents, to Tacoma, by the most practicable road or trail, and upon arriving at that point, will be relieved from further duty.

2. Captain Ashton will deliver to the deputy sheriff in charge, at Gilman, all arms and ammunition entrusted to him for safe keeping, taking a receipt of such officer for same.

SPECIAL ORDERS NO. 29 - Seattle, July 14, 1891

1. On July 15, 1891, as soon as Captain Ashton and his command shall have vacated the camp at the Gilman coal mines, Captain Ingraham with the members of companies D and E now on duty will occupy the same and will remain there until further orders charged with the same duties discharged by Captain Ashton under previous orders from these headquarters directed to him and his command.

2. If the number of men belonging to companies D and E thus detailed do not equal fifteen, Captain Fife will detail sufficient number from his command to make that number.

3. Captain Fife will also detail one bugler and one drummer to act as musicians for Captain Ingraham's command.

4. Captain Ingraham and his command will be at all times and in every respect subject to the orders of the post commander at Gilman.

BY ORDER OF COLONEL HAINES

OFFICIAL

SPECIAL ORDERS NO. 30 - July 14, 1891

1. Company G, Captain William S. Shank commanding, stationed at New Castle, will, on July 15, break camp and proceed to Tacoma, by way of Seattle, on the 1:30 P. M. train, with all baggage.

2. Tents will be securely packed and delivered to the quartermaster at New Castle.

3. Captain Shank, with his command, will report to Captain C. L. F. Kellogg at the Columbia and Puget Sound Depot upon his arrival.

4. Quartermaster will furnish necessary transportation.

SPECIAL ORDERS NO. 31 - July 16, 1891

1. Lieutenant Ross, with a detail of C company, now stationed at New Castle, will march forthwith, in heavy marching order, to Gilman by the shortest practical route.

2. Lieutenant Ross, with his command, will, upon his arrival at Gilman, report to Captain Fife.

3. Lieutenant Ross will then report at these headquarters for orders.

4. Major F. A. Gaus, post commander at New Castle, will report at these headquarters for orders.

SPECIAL ORDERS NO. 32 - July 16, 1891

1. Captain W. J. Fife, post commander at Gilman, will, on Saturday, the 18th of July, 1891, cause his command to break camp, pack tents and other baggage for transportation and proceed on the 3:55 P. M. train to Seattle with all baggage.

2. Upon his arrival at Seattle he will report with his command to Lieutenant Hatfield, regimental commissary, at the armory.

3. Captain Ingraham and his command, upon arrival at Seattle, will be relieved from further duty.

4. Captain Fife, with C Company, will proceed on the 8:20 P. M. train to Tacoma, and upon reaching that point, will be relieved from further duty.

5. The commissary will furnish necessary subsistence.

6. The quartermaster will furnish necessary transportation.

"In reply to instructions contained in Special Orders No. 31, Major Gaus, under date of July 17th, telegraphed that he did not think it advisable for the detail to leave New Castle until the deputy sheriffs were relieved at that point, and reported that a dynamite explosion had taken place on the previous evening. He also reported the detachment could not reach Gilman in time for the train which left there for Seattle at 3 o'clock, and in reply to all of which Colonel Haines wired him to report with detachment direct to Seattle. On the following day subsequently Colonel Haines wired him to remain at New Castle until further orders, and to wire him if reinforcements were needed.

"Under date of July 18th, everything being quiet at New Castle, Major Gaus was ordered to report at once to the armory in Seattle.

After reporting the inclusive dates of service for each company, Lieutenant Colonel Green stated:

"Too much cannot be said regarding the manner in which the officers and men of the several companies, and of troop B, performed the duties which were assigned to them, at different times, no matter how arduous; which, however, was not at all surprising considering the example set them by our late commander, Colonel J. C. Haines, whose whole mind was set upon the solving of the difficulties as presented, and who in the critical moments showed that rare judgment which characterized him at all

times during his life, and which in these troubles on several occasions prevented loss of life and property."

Very respectfully your obedient servant,

JOSEPH GREEN
Lt. Col. Commanding First Regiment, N. G. W.

INDIAN TROUBLES IN OKANOGAN COUNTY

The following exchange of telegrams signaled the beginning of Washington's last major Indian troubles

FROM COUNTY COMMISSIONERS OF OKANOGAN COUNTY: January 10, 1891

"TO HIS EXCELLENCY CHARLES E. LAUGHTON, GOVERNOR:

AN INDIAN WHO WAS IMPLICATED IN THE MURDER OF COLE IN OCTOBER WAS LAST NIGHT TAKEN FROM JAIL AND HANGED. OWING TO THE FACT THAT HE HAD GIVEN HIMSELF UP TO THE SHERIFF, AND THE BITTER FEELING EXISTING BETWEEN THE CITIZENS AND INDIANS AT THIS TIME, SERIOUS TROUBLE IS FEARED. THE PRIEST SAYS THE INDIANS HAVE HELD FOUR MEETINGS LATELY AND THE YOUNG BUCKS ARE ANXIOUS FOR AN OUTBREAK. THEY HAVE MANIFESTED IN DIFFERENT WAYS THAT THEY ARE ANGERED. THE CITIZENS OF THE COUNTY ARE COMPARATIVELY UNARMED, AND THE SITUATION AT THIS TIME DEMANDS THAT WE ASK OF YOU TO DO ALL IN YOUR POWER TO HAVE FIVE HUNDRED RIFLES, WITH SUFFICIENT AMMUNITION SENT TO COULEE CITY AT ONCE. THIS, THAT OUR CITIZENS MAY BE ARMED AND BE PREPARED AS WELL AS POSSIBLE FOR AN OUTBREAK. PLEASE TELEGRAPH AT ONCE IF WE MAY EXPECT ARMS. OUR MESSENGER RODE ALL NIGHT TO DELIVER MESSAGE.

OLYMPIA, January 10, 1891

"TO THE COUNTY COMMISSIONERS AND SHERIFF OF OKANOGAN COUNTY:

CARE OF MESSENGER, COULEE CITY, OKANOGAN COUNTY, WASHINGTON. TWO HUNDRED RIFLES ORDERED SHIPPED EXPRESS IMMEDIATELY. SIX THOUSAND ROUNDS BALL CARTRIDGES SAME. OFFICER DETAILED TO ACCOMPANY AND DELIVER. COUNTY COMMISSIONERS WILL BE HELD RESPONSIBLE FOR THIS ORDNANCE. SHERIFFS MUST USE EVERY EFFORT TO MAINTAIN PEACE. ARMS MUST BE USED ONLY IN THE CASE OF ACTUAL NECESSITY OCCASIONED BY ATTACK FROM INDIANS. ADVISE ME FULLY OF CONDITION OF AFFAIRS DAILY. IF ABSOLUTE NECESSITY EXISTS, MORE RIFLES AND CARTRIDGES WILL BE SENT AS SOON AS OBTAINED. I URGE THAT EVERY MEANS KNOWN TO THE LAW BE USED TO AVOID ANY CONFLICT WITH INDIANS. WANTON DISREGARD BY CITIZENS IN IGNORING OPERATION BY COURTS IN COUNTY CANNOT BE TOLERATED AT EXPENSE OF STATE."

(SIGNED) CHAS. E. LAUGHTON, ACTING GOVERNOR

Another message was received by the Acting Governor on the same date from the citizens of Okanogan County demanding that troops be sent immediately for protection from the Indians. As a result the following telegram was dispatched from Olympia on January 11, 1891:

"BRIGADIER GENERAL JOHN GIBBON, SAN FRANCISCO, CALIFORNIA:

TELEGRAM RECEIVED FROM THE COUNTY COMMISSIONERS AND CITIZENS OF OKANOGAN COUNTY IN THIS STATE, ASKING FOR IMMEDIATE PRESENCE OF TROOPS TO PROTECT THE CITIZENS AGAINST INDIANS PREPARING FOR AN OUTBREAK, AND ARE BEING JOINED BY INDIANS FROM BRITISH COLUMBIA. TELEGRAM SAYS FIGHTING WILL PROBABLY TAKE PLACE BEFORE IT IS RECEIVED. I HAVE SENT TWO HUNDRED RIFLES AND AMMUNITION TO THE COUNTY COMMISSIONERS OF OKANOGAN COUNTY

FOR DISTRIBUTION AMONG THE CITIZENS IN CASE OF NEED. I DEEM THE SITUATION AS OF SUCH IMPORTANCE AS TO ASK YOU TO SEND TROOPS TO CONCONULLY AND TO OTHER PLACES IN THE COUNTY, OVER THE MOST CONVENIENT ROUTE WITHOUT DELAY, AS SCENE OF ACTION IS NINETY MILES FROM TELEGRAPH OFFICE AT COULEE CITY, TERMINUS OF WASHINGTON CENTRAL RAILROAD. MESSENGER RODE ALL NIGHT TO DELIVER MESSAGE.

(SIGNED) CHAS E. LAUGHTON, ACTING GOVERNOR

Another exchange of telegrams between Acting Governor Laughton and Brigadier General Gibbons took place the following day regarding the affair. However, before any action could be taken by General Gibbon to send troops, Brigadier General A. P. Curry had advised the Governor that the matter was not as serious as was first believed and General Gibbon was so advised. General Curry's official report on the incident follows:

HEADQUARTERS FIRST BRIGADE, N. G. W.
Spokane Falls, January 24, 1891

To: General R. G. O'Brien, Adjutant General, N. G. W., Olympia:

"Dear Sir: - In pursuance to telegrams received from you I sent Lieutenant Colonel Waters to Coulee City to arrange for transportation to Conconully, a distance of ninety miles from the railroad. I left here with Lieutenant J. J. White, Wednesday, January 14th, with the arms and ammunition and an escort of four men. We arrived at Coulee City on the evening of January 14th and delivered fifty guns and five hundred rounds of ammunition to J. C. Kellner for Almira, Lincoln County, and fifty two guns and five hundred and thirty two rounds of ammunition to J. R. Lewis, chairman county commissioners of Douglas county for Coulee City. On Thursday, January 15th, we started for Conconully and arrived there Saturday evening, January 17th, and delivered one hundred and seventy eight guns and thirty two hundred and forty rounds of ammunition to D. McGilvera, chairman of county commissioners of Okanogan county. While crossing the Columbia River I learned that the Indian farmer Thomas was in the neighborhood and I dispatched a courier to have him meet me at Conconully, and at Ruby City I engaged the services of Lew Broede and his squaw to gather together all the Indians with a view of holding a consultation. Learning that the Indian farmer Thomas had a good deal of influence with the Indians I proposed to him to go into the upper part of the country and invite the leading men and the young men to meet me for a conference on the reservation on Tuesday. After assisting in forming an independent military company at Conconully, giving them some instructions and advise on military drill, we left for Gumming's Ferry, a distance of twenty miles, on Monday January 19th, and arrived there that night. On Tuesday, January 20th, we crossed the Okanogan river into the reservation, and there met Chief Smitkin, Antwine and Captains Ameos, Gabrael, Narcis and Klappellatan with about seventy-five of their men. We held a council "with Father DeRouge as interpreter" and I told them that bringing arms into the country did not mean war, but if the white men were attacked they would defend themselves, but the arms were not brought in to shoot Indians. I told them that I represented the state with a large force of well equipped and drilled men; that the white men became alarmed and asked the governor to send troops and arms, but that the Governor, instead of sending troops, had sent me to investigate, and I hoped that on my return I should be able to make a favorable report; that the Indians must not hold all white men responsible for the acts of a few white men; that two wrongs did not make a right; that I did not uphold the white men in hanging the Indian Steven, but that, if the Indians went to war it would probably be a war of extermination; that I should recommend that, when the court met, that an investigation be made to try and bring to justice all parties concerned in the hanging of their comrade Steven; that I could not promise them that the men would be punished for I knew not whether their guilt could be proven.

"I told them that it was understood by a few white men that when the Indians dance it meant war, and exacted a promise from them to stop it, because bad white men might take advantage of it and do

something rash, which would cause war. I told them above all things to let whiskey alone and try and help ferret out all parties concerned in selling them whiskey and report them to Farmer Thomas, whose heart was in the right place for the Indians. Chief Smitkin then arose and said: I am but a poor man, and not a great chief. I and my men work for the church, and the church teaches us to be good and behave ourselves and give up drinking; that he was glad that we came and sorry at what had happened; that now that we were there, we could see ourselves and state things in their true light. If we had not come, things would be all in the dark. We could see for ourselves that they were all good; that they come from all over the country to see us; that there was no truth in what had been said; that the Indian farmer two days ago had heard their minds, and there had been no change since; that he was glad we had come and glad to meet us.

"I asked him if he knew of anyone who had made threats to kill white men in order to get even for the hanging of the Indian Steven, and he answered that he had never heard of any of his boys making any threats to kill white men; that they were all glad at the treatment the boy had had after death; that the white men who had brought the body to them was very much afraid, but I told them there was no danger. I slept with him myself that night under my blanket, and in the morning took him to Cummings. I never heard of anything to be done to the white men. That is all I have to say, and am glad to have met you. I asked him if there was any truth in the report that some of the younger boys had threatened to get even in one, two or three moons, and if he knew them, and in case of an outbreak if he could control them, and he answered that he had not heard of any threats being made, and that now after this conference he thought the young men would listen to the advice of the older men and chiefs.

"Doc John, the father of the dead boy, then arose and said that he had told all the boys to be of good heart. Of course they were all sorry for what had happened, but they were not mad or angry, and that nobody had any intention of doing anything wrong that the white people might be ashamed of, and the chiefs of all the tribes around there had always told them to keep the peace. If he was a great chief he would say more, but would never cease to speak well of the white people; that he was glad we had come to our own children to know their minds. They did not know themselves what was the matter with the white people, and perhaps now that we were there, we might be able to make the hearts of all the white people feel glad. That the whiskey came to them from the white people and not from the Indians, and that perhaps the white chief might be able to stop that, and if so, it would do them much good. I told him that the white chief could not stop the sale of liquor to the Indians; also that the Indians must not go around armed; unless when hunting, in order not to arouse newcomers; also that when rumors came to them from British Columbia and the Buffalo country in order to enlist them in warfare, they must report the matter to the officers; that if war was declared against another country, they were expected to defend this, their own, country. Doc John replied that he would not talk any more; that he had no hard feelings against the white people, and would not take his gun with him except when out hunting for something to eat for his family.

"Puck Miakin, who has heretofore been regarded as the leader of the bad young men, being called upon arose and said: All here are the white man's friends, and that they would always do as their chief told them, and their chief never told them to do anything but what was good, and they did everything told them with a good heart; that he was one of the chief's boys and did not want anyone to think that he or any of the boys wanted to do wrong; that all the boys wished to do right. There upon he called upon all the young men present to indorse what he had said, which they all did. I told them that I was glad to hear them speak as they had, and on my return would make as favorable report as I could, telling the white people that all was quiet, also that the chiefs must report to the agent whenever any of their boys did wrong and have them punished, also report white men or Indians that sell them whiskey.

"Chief Antwine then arose and said: Long ago the soldiers came into the country and the Indians were scattered around on top of the rocks, and the white chief told them it was bad and they took his word and tried to be good and live like white people; from them they learned what was good, and now they were good and not bad. They always remembered the first white chief (Col. Wright) that came there and told them to be good and try to do what was told them, and from that time till now the Indians

had grown up and tried to remember what had been told them. Although white people were living all around them, he thought that not one could say that they were bad, and wanted the white people to understand that they meant no harm; that they were all glad that we had come, for I think that you will put things in their true light and make them feel happy, and hope that you will speak to the white people and tell them what we say and stop all further trouble. I then told them that should trouble arise and even one Indian kill another that they must report the matter to the officers and let the law take its course.

"Klappellatan next arose and said: That he had come a long way to meet and to see us, and that he hoped our speaking to the Indians would put a stop to the drinking and gambling among them, and thanked us from the bottom of his heart for our coming.

"He, as well as all the rest of the Indians, assured me that they never gambled except when under the influence of liquor, and I told them I was glad to hear of their assurances and hoped that they would stop drinking and gambling.

"Chief Suwapkin next spoke as follows: There is no wrong to be feared from the Indians. Who is it from the white people that say the Indians want to fight? Letters have been sent telling that we were going to war but we knew nothing about it. Long ago the white chiefs came to us and they spoke of war, and after that we put our arms away and have lived in peace ever since. How is it that the question has arisen again about war? Let no one believe the lies spread against us, and stop all further trouble. All the older people tell the Indians to be good, and that advise the boys will always follow.

"On our return from the reservation we met a committee of ten citizens residing on the Okanogan river who insisted upon troops being sent in, claiming that they did not think their families were safe, but when informed of the result of our conference and the pledges given, not only by the chiefs but old Indians and young bucks, that they would faithfully carry out their promises made to me, they seemed to be satisfied, and they in turn promised to be careful and commit no overt acts which might lead to an outbreak, and that they would also assist in bringing to justice the peddlers of whiskey to the Indians.

* * * * *

"We then left Cummings and arrived at Coulee City Thursday evening, January 22nd, without anything worthy of note, and arrived home Friday, January 23rd.

"In conversing with the white men and Indians regarding this trouble, I have come to the following conclusion: That the Indians, maddened by the hanging of their comrade Steven, determined to get even with the whites and made many threats; that they sent runners to the British Columbia Indians, the Kettle River Indians and also to Joseph and Moses' bands asking for assistance in case of an uprising; that the two former bands, Kettle River and British Columbia, promised substantial aid; that Moses and Joseph both declined to take part but failed to denounce and discourage it as they should have done. Those upon whom they depended and who had promised them assistance in case of an outbreak would number from three hundred to four hundred. This action, however, was confined entirely to the younger class and did not meet the approval of the older ones nor their local chiefs. The prompt action of the state authorities and the best council of the older men and chiefs, aided by the priest and the Indian farmer, prevailed, and I anticipate no more trouble except some trifling white man or Indian should, through the influence in liquor, commit some overt act which might be mistaken as a general uprising. I cannot close this report without urging a more thorough investigation and prosecution of the traffic of liquor on the reservation or to the Indians under any circumstances, and the bringing to justice of the parties concerned in the hanging of the Indian boy Steven. Liquor was the cause of this trouble, and such is the case with nearly every trouble in the country. I cannot speak too highly of the work done by the priest Father DeRouge and the Indian farmer Thomas, who seem to have great influence with the Indians and helped me greatly in bringing the Indians together for the conference."

The Adjutant General in his report to the Governor stated much credit was due General Curry for the able manner in which he discharged his duties in allaying the fears of the white citizens.

REPORT ON THE BAKER BAY (ILLWACO) FISHERIES INCIDENT

HON. JOHN H. MCGRAW, GOVERNOR OF WASHINGTON Illwaco, April 7, 1896

The undersigned, sheriff of Pacific county, in the State of Washington most respectfully represents:

That on Friday, the third day of April 1896, while about twenty fishermen, citizens of the State of Washington, were lawfully engaged in driving piles to be used in fish traps in the waters of Columbia river at a place called Baker's Bay, in Pacific County, Washington, a large number, to wit, between two hundred and three hundred men, most of whom residents of Astoria, Oregon, armed with knives, hatchets and other deadly weapons, came with a steamboat and a large number of fish boats to the place where said men were so driving said piling and, forcibly, violently and unlawfully by intimidation, threats and actual force and violence, compelled said men who were so lawfully engaged in driving piling, to pull piling from a number of lawful fish traps, which had been lawfully operated prior to 1896, and which owners intended to lawfully operate during the fishing, season of 1896; that said men driving piling were working from three steam pile drivers, each of which consists of a boat about eighteen feet in width and about forty feet six inches in length, with steam pile driver and gear, and each of which is worth from \$1,500 to \$2,000; that said assailants, in large numbers, gathered in fish boats around about said three pile drivers and in large numbers boarded the same and by force overcame the men lawfully thereon; that said assailants attempted to and did do great damage to said pile driver boats, and did cut the ropes belonging to the same and cast overboard the anchors, and otherwise broke, injured and destroyed various parts of said pile drivers; that said assailants compelled said men to continue to pull said stakes as long as the pile drivers were in a condition to be used, and until the gearing to said pile drivers became broken by reason of rough usage at the hands of said assailants; that after said drivers could be no longer be used, by reason of their broken condition, said assailants cut the ropes which held them in place and set said pile drivers, three in number adrift over the Columbia river bar, into the ocean, in order to destroy the same; that as two of the drivers were about to go over the bar a steamer belonging to P. J. McGowen & Sons caught them and towed them to a place of safety; that one of the drivers was cast upon the beach of said island at the mouth of the Columbia river; that on Monday the sixth day of April, 1896, said driver had not been saved although a large force of men had been at work attempting to get the same off the sand and to a place of safety; that as to whether or not said driver or any part thereof has since been saved the undersigned is uninformed, but it is the opinion of the fishermen of said county that said driver cannot be saved, thereby causing a loss of about \$1,500 to the owner who is a citizen of the state; that at said time and place, April 3rd, said assailants knocked down, kicked and bruised and otherwise maltreated a number of said citizens of the state, and threatened to hang some of them to the said pile driver and set them adrift over the bar; that said assailants refused to allow any of the said citizens to return to the town of Illwaco (which, was about three miles away) until after said drivers had been set adrift as aforesaid; that at said time and place said assailants informed said citizens that the fisherman's union, a powerful organization of the State of Oregon, composed of many hundreds of gill-netters, was supporting them in said depredations, and that it was the intention of said assailants and of said union to prevent, by force and violence, the operation of any fish traps in Baker's Bay during the season of 1896; that they would come over in large numbers and destroy the drivers as often as our citizens attempted to use them, and that they would destroy the web, lawfully placed on the trap piling, as fast as they were placed thereon; that after said depredations had been committed a number of fish boats containing a large number of Oregon fishermen were lying in wait, near Sand Island in Pacific county, to destroy the property of our citizens as they would attempt to complete their traps; that said Oregon gill-netters have threatened to, and the undersigned and the fishermen along Baker's Bay, believe they will, destroy and attempt to destroy the fish traps of our citizens in Baker's Bay; that on account of the peculiar situation and the character of the defense, the undersigned is unable to adequately or at all protect the property of the citizens of said county; that said Oregon gill-netters can and undoubtedly will make frequent incursions into the waters of said bay, and to great extent destroy

the fishing industry of the state, unless assistance is immediately rendered by the state; that the fishing season opens on April 10th, 1896, but our fishermen on account of the violence heretofore committed, and the threats made by said Oregon fishermen, and the inability of said sheriff to render adequate protection, dare not place their webs on the fish trap piling and dare not expose their property to the violence of said Oregon fishermen; that unless our fishermen are able to operate their traps during the whole season, they will be greatly and irreparably injured; that in Baker's Bay there are about 400 fish traps belonging to citizens and residents of the State of Washington, of the aggregate value of about \$40,000; that the value of the pile drivers and the boats used in the construction and operation of said traps is about \$50,000; that the approximate value of the fish caught per season is \$400,000; that the fishing season is of only four months duration, from April 10th to August 10th; that for each trap a license of \$10 is paid to the State of Washington; that, great fear prevails among not only the fishermen of said county, but among the cannerymen as well; that the fishing industry; which is the greatest industry of said county, is almost at a standstill, and the fishermen are now idle, whereas, except for the matters above stated, they would now be engaged in placing the web on their traps preparatory to the commencement of fishing on the 10th of April.

WHEREFORE, by reason of the matters and things herein stated the undersigned, as sheriff of said county, most respectfully, calls upon the commander-in-chief for such aid as in his discretion is just, proper and adequate.

(Signed) Thomas Roney, Sheriff of Pacific County.

BRIGADE HEADQUARTERS, NATIONAL GUARD OF WASHINGTON
Seattle, April 15, 1896

Adjutant General, N. G. W., Olympia, Washington

Sir: - I have the honor to report that in accordance with Special Orders No. 9 from general headquarters, dated April 8, 1896, I left Seattle at 12:20 P. M. of April 9, 1896, with a detachment of the First Infantry Regiment ordered to Illwaco, Washington, by Special Orders No. 9 from general headquarters, and proceeded to Illwaco, arriving there at 2 o'clock A. M. of Friday, April 10, 1896.

No fishing was being done by the Illwaco fishermen and no preparations for fishing were being made by them, and there seemed to be some uncertainty as to what course should be pursued by them. I learned that previous to my arrival a committee of the local fishermen's organization had been sent to a meeting of the fishermen's union at Astoria, and that at such meeting resolutions were adopted to the effect that members of the union would not engage in fishing the Columbia river until the price of five cents per pound for all fish delivered at the canneries on the river was assured. I was further informed that upon the return of this committee to Illwaco a meeting of the local fishermen, was held and that the committee made a report to this meeting in favor of joining the Astoria fishermen in the strike which had then been inaugurated, and that the report was approved by the meeting.

In a conference with Sheriff Honey regarding the situation on Saturday, April 11th, I was informed by him that the storm then prevailing prevented the fishermen from establishing their traps, and further, that the meeting to which the report of the committee had been made regarding the strike, was not a meeting of the local organization, but only of some of its members, and that the local organization would speedily define its position and prepare for active fishing operations on Monday. I informed Sheriff Roney that unless the local fishermen proposed to begin work as soon as the weather would permit, the force would be withdrawn.

On Saturday night a meeting of the local fishermen's organization was held at which resolutions were adopted which have been published in the press.

On Monday a number of fishermen began to work upon their traps and on Tuesday morning a large number were at work and it was evident that at least a large majority of the local trap fishermen would go to work without further delay.

The Illwaco merchants and citizens generally are firmly convinced that only the presence of troops prevents the destruction of the traps in Baker's Bay, and I am of the opinion that there is good ground for this feeling.

By noon of Tuesday, April 14th, Captain Adams of D Company, First Regiment, had established a very efficient patrol of the entire bay.

I left Illwaco at 4 o'clock P. M., Tuesday, April 14, 1896, arriving at Seattle at 8:15 A. M., today.

I expect to receive tomorrow or the next day a detailed report from Captain Adams of the manner in which he has established his patrol, which report will be at once forwarded to general headquarters.

During all my stay in Illwaco the weather was very stormy and rain fell almost constantly. The behavior of the detachment on the journey and after getting into camp has been commendable in the highest degree.

E. M. CARR, BRIG. GEN., COMDG, N. G. W.

The following are extracts from the report of Captain Frank E. Adams, commanding the detachment of two other officers and forty enlisted men of Company D:

"The arrival of the detachment found a division among the trap men on the price of fish, and the gill netters determined to hold out for five cents a pound; thus when expected that all on the Washington shore would be peaceful, a strong feeling against the troops was apparent, owing to a misunderstanding as to the reason for the presence of the troops, some ignorant ones insisting that they were employed by the cannery combine, for 50¢ per day, to force the fishing at four cents per pound.

"In contemplation of internal, as well as external violence, it became immediately necessary to establish efficient patrols on land and water, for the protection of those desiring to proceed with pile driving and setting or trap nets; a call was made upon the sheriff for patrol boats, and the steamer Sea Foam was placed at the disposal of the commanding officer, who in the meantime had prepared a map of the entire situation, upon which appeared range dolphins, which marked the channel lines in Baker's Bay, proving very convenient in designating positions of boats and reporting locations as each dolphin consisted of a pile bearing a cross board with the letters "U. S." and a number. A complete circuit was then taken of the entire field, and a plan of operations formulated, resulting in the establishment of an outpost at the east end of Sand Island, consisting of a boat house, designated on the map as Fort Finstopper; at the same time a detail was dispatched to Chinook, the headquarters of the striking trap men, where a camp was established, afterwards known as Paradise. From this point a telephone line followed the beach for about eight miles to Illwaco, and instant communication was obtainable between camps. After a thorough overhauling of the line by Dr. Parks, the owner, and Lieutenant Bryan, commissary of the department, a code was prepared permitting of communications without divulging the contents of the message to those unfamiliar with the key. To effectively cover the eight miles of rough shore line intervening between Illwaco and Chinook, or Camp Paradise, a mounted patrol was established consisting of two night patrols, meeting at a point midway the camps and returning, each to their respective stations; during the day, this shore and the movements of the numerous inhabitants scattered along the beach, were discernable from the day patrol boat, Camp Paradise and Fort Finstopper, the latter being so named by reason of its being the point from which the first shot was fired upon a passing sail boat, to emphasize and enforce the order of "come ashore".

"It was apparent that every movement of the troops was closely watched and reported by agents of the fishermen's union of Astoria to that organization, which consisted of between two and three thousand men, comprising all nationalities, the majority being either Russian Finns or Italians; this union apparently controlled the actions of these men through the officers, who seemed to take a great interest in the approaching political contest to be held in June for the election of county officials, and it seemed their desire to maintain a feeling of animosity for the purpose of keeping the fishermen upon shore until after election, and later developments indicated the truth of this belief.

"Investigation as to a possible resumption of trap driving upon the disputed territory heretofore mentioned indicated renewed operations upon the settlement of the weather, and in consequence the

question arose as to the ownership of Sand Island and a request was made of the commanding officer at Fort Canby for permission to patrol the island, and upon consent thereof a plan for erection of a small fortification commanding the locations in question was adopted and a detail transferred to erect a breastwork thereafter known as Fort Starvation, made necessary by reason of rough and shallow water which prohibited the establishment of water patrols and thereby avoiding unnecessary details of men, which was an essential point all through the campaign by reason of the limited force operating over such a large expanse of territory.

"Sand Island consists of a barren strip of land some four miles long, formed in "L" shape by the current of the river and tides and covered with driftwood and logs; consequently, upon the establishment of Fort Finstopper at the other end and Starvation at the point of the "L", it became necessary to provide means of communication for transmittal of messages, and a patrol to maintain diligent watch along the outer shore, to avoid the possibility of a large force landing between the stations during the night; to accomplish these ends two horses were transported to the island and a camp established at the lower end, and signal apparatus communicating with the outer end of the long dock, leading from headquarters three-quarters of a mile into Baker's Bay, and such signals as were received by the operator at the end of the dock reached headquarters by means of a bicycle courier or telephone to the telegraph office, where an operator was detailed to communicate with a detail established at Cape Disappointment light house, from which point a commanding view of Astoria, 15 miles distant, and the intervening waters was obtainable and from which point a telegraph line connected with Illwaco.*****

"To complete the circuit, a wire from Chinook telephone line was run to the telegraph office and the operator was in direct communication, with the end of the long wharf, Camp Paradise and Cape Disappointment Light, or Camp Searchlight, as it is called.

"Up to this time (April 15) the patrol by boat was rendered very uncertain by the reason of impossibility to make proper arrangements for service by the boats, which consisted of the steamer Sea Foam and gasoline launches Iris, Ida Hazel and Hattie Hawthorn, which were at the disposal of Sheriff Roney, when not engaged otherwise; it seemed impracticable to endeavor to maintain control of the situation, with such uncertain boat service, and though every effort had been made to charter two steamers, the result had been fruitless up to this time, and it was determined to withdraw all outposts, as developments indicated a desire on the part of the more passionate of the strikers, at Astoria, to visit Sand Island and annihilate the "hoodlums and blood thirsty villains", as troops were repeatedly termed in the Oregon papers, after it had become necessary to enforce the orders issued, by the use of the rifle. The orders up to this time had been to stop all sail boats going in or out of Baker's Bay, ascertain the names of the occupants, number of the boat and destination, and on Sand Island to hold all landing for inspection by the sheriff.

"These orders kept the outposts busy, and the scarcity of boats for patrol caused worry, by the inability to respond to signals from the island; at this time however the steamer "Wenona" came into the bay, subject to the orders of the Sheriff and served as flagship during the entire service.

* * * * *

"Subsequent communications between the commander of the fort and the commander of the department of the Columbia upon the subject of control resulted in the withdrawal of the national guard and the establishment of a detail of regulars, composing one lieutenant and eighteen men. This relieved the command of a very disagreeable portion of the work. It is needless to remark that this change was effected without any of the exciting and warlike proceedings so elaborately portrayed in the daily newspapers *****.

* * * * *

"About the first report received regarding the fishermen's union was a description of their schooner rigged boat, Pathfinder, which was reported as steel plate lined, with loopholes in the bulwarks, and provided with steam power for drawing piles. This boat had been used several times in committing depredations along the river, and in consequence the excitement was intense among the

citizens of Illwaco, on Sunday, April 19th, when this famous boat was sighted approaching Sand Island**. However, the Pathfinder remained outside the limits established by the detachment patrols and appeared searching or dragging for something on the bottom of the river, but information received later indicated an intent on the part of the strikers from Oregon to draw troops on to commit some act of violence, which was happily averted by their remaining where they belonged, outside the limits, of the patrols. Never-the-less, the day was one of excitement.

* * * * *

"Owing to the withdrawal of all outposts, and the consequent increased duty of patrols, it became apparent that the service was too constant for the number of men comprising the detachment, and to maintain the efficiency it became necessary to devise means for keeping a lookout from some promontory readily accessible from headquarters; and after a careful investigation Cannery Hill was chosen as a location for this post by reason of its close proximity, accessibility and the commanding view therefrom. The camp was established on April 28th and was continued through the entire service.

* * * * *

"Trap nets were now dotting the bay, requiring increasing vigilance to cover the expanding territory, and owing to reports received as to the intended action of the strikers, it was deemed advisable to re-establish the camp at Paradise and also at Finstopper. These were continued until the trapmen, desiring to fish from Chinook, had set their nets, and were able to watch them by day; and seining crews established on San Island maintained a watch from that point. At this time the outposts were again withdrawn and the work of guarding the nets at night and the pile drivers during their operations, was the sole work of the detachment.

* * * * *

"The starting of the cannery and catching of fish, resulted in uneasiness on the part of the strikers, and open threats were made to burn the cannery, and on May 8th the Pathfinder was employed, by the strikers, to draw some trap piles on Desdemona Sands, on the Oregon side; the proceeding was carefully watched from Camp Bay View, and every preparation made to receive the gentlemen did they relish the lawlessness to such an extent that a trial at the obnoxious Washington traps would be the result but their appetite seemed to be satisfied after spoiling one man's living for the season, and they towed their formidable craft back to the harbor in Young's River, close to Astoria.

As a result, Captain Adams wired Adjutant General Boutelle to forward a howitzer for use in case a similar action was attempted on the Washington side. The gun arrived on May 7th.

"Fish were now running and were being caught and canned at Illwaco and an attempt was made to start a cannery in Oregon some distance above Astoria; this caused a demonstration on the part of the striking fishermen on May 13th, resulting in an exchange of shots and the destruction of some fish, and it was reported that several men had been wounded; this was the first of a long series of lawlessness on the part of the strikers, resulting in the loss of a great many lives on both sides.

* * * * *

"Depredations were now being committed almost every night along the river, though outside the jurisdiction of the detachment, and not knowing what time the strikers might attempt to stop fishing in Baker's Bay it was considered judicious to barricade the patrol boats, and the requisite number of railroad ties were loaned by the Illwaco Railroad and Navigation Company for the purpose; and as it was now necessary to do considerable patrolling in small sail and row boats, where the rifle was as best a very clumsy weapon to handle, a requisition was made upon general headquarters for revolvers, and upon their arrival each man was furnished therewith.

"Without attempting a detailed report regarding the loss of life and destruction of property upon the river, outside the patrol limits of the detachment, it might be advisable to mention that eight people were murdered in rapid succession while endeavoring to pursue their lawful vocation of fishing; and some of those committing these acts of violence undoubtedly met with just deserts; it was estimated that at last twenty persons met their death as a direct outcome of the agitation.

* * * * *

"On the Oregon side matters were assuming a serious aspect, resulting in a call for troops, and the establishment of a full regiment of infantry and one light battery, manning two 12-pounders, and two gatling guns, at Astoria, on the 16th of June; these troops, scattered over the river on the Oregon side, permitted a slight relaxation of the diligent duty heretofore performed by the National Guard of Washington, and resulted in partial rest for a few days, though the night patrols were still maintained, and a watch kept from Camp Bay View.

"After the arrival of the Oregon Guard, some of the Oregon fishermen who desired to fish, were afforded protection, and fished in the main channel, and the canneries at Astoria were started, though those up the river at Megler's, Cook's and other points had been running for some time though operating under difficulties by reason of the attitude of the strikers; while in Baker's Bay and McGowan's, just outside the bay, the canneries were running full time and had experienced no difficulty whatever, and fish caught in Baker's Bay had been shipped to the canneries at Astoria.

"On Saturday, June 21st a meeting of the Union fishermen was held at Astoria, and a secret ballot taken, which terminated the great strike, but did not eradicate the bitter feeling against the traps of Baker's Bay which the gill netters were determined to destroy.

"On this day a visit to the Oregon Guard resulted in an exchange of ideas and information, which indicated trouble for the Washington traps, and on the night of the 22nd the patrol boat ran across a sail boat among the traps, but the weather was very rough and the wind strong, and though shots were fired, the patrol was unable to overhaul or capture the boat."

On the 26th of June, 1896, Captain Adams received instructions from Adjutant General Boutelle to relieve one officer and nineteen enlisted men and return them to Seattle via Kalama. Upon receipt of the order, Lieutenant Skinner and his detachment left on the steamer Wenona for Kalama at 5 P. M. that day, arriving in Seattle the following day at the same time.

In the meantime the balance of the detachment continued to maintain patrols until the 1st day of July, when instructions were received that the Commander-in-Chief desired the relief of the detachment and the immediate return to Seattle.

With reference to the departure of Captain Adams and the remainder of his detachment, the following was published in the Pacific Journal on Friday, July 3, 1896 at Illwaco:

MILITIA GONE

"Last Saturday a telegram was received by Captain Adams of the militia company here to send home twenty of the militia boys; accordingly, for a short time things were lively around camp, and in a couple of hours twenty of the boys were on the Wenona and steaming up the river for Kalama, where they took the train for Seattle. It was supposed that the balance of the boys would remain here until the fishing season closed, but a dispatch was received Wednesday evening recalling them all. Without recognizing the fact that the boys were only fulfilling their sworn duty, and with them coming here was not a matter of choice, they have been grossly insulted by some of the Oregon press, which called them "curs" and "cowards", besides the opprobrious epithet of "tin soldiers".

"If any of their "dago" pets, however, had undertaken any of their dirty work, they would have found that the boys were a long way from being coward, and it was only their presence here that has saved us thousands of dollars of property, and, should their presence again be necessary they will return as quickly as they came in the first place.

"As for the boys themselves, they are, without exception a fine body of men, of which the state may be proud.

"Every one was sent to the front in the great railway strike a couple of years ago and proved their mettle and that they were to be depended on in a tight place.

"The first few weeks following their arrival the weather was most disagreeable, raining every day, but not a murmur escaped the lips of a single man. The duty they performed on Sand Island until

relieved by the regulars was no picnic, and they leave here carrying with them an increased respect for the National Guard of Washington by every citizen of Illwaco, who fully recognized the fact that by their presence they have been permitted to exercise the liberty granted them by the Constitution of the United States, which was threatened by a horde of foreigners from another state.

"Appreciating the call for their services, the citizens of the town, before the militia left, presented the company with a large sized photograph of Illwaco and Baker's Bay, showing the scenes of their labors. Mayor Howerton made the presentation speech in a few well chosen words, which were responded to by Captain Adams, who accepted the souvenir on behalf of the company, and which will hereafter be kept in the armory at Seattle. Rev. Atkins and others made a few remarks, and the boys were dismissed by giving three cheers and a "tyee" for Illwaco, and the citizens echoing in like manner for the boys present and the National Guard of the State of Washington in general".

During the previous year, 1895, troops of the Washington National Guard were called into service on three different occasions. In Ellensburg on 9 November in response to a request of the Sheriff of Kittitas County, the company stationed there was called out for 10 days to suppress threatened violence to its citizens. The same company was called out earlier in the year for six days to assist the Sheriff in the safekeeping of prisoners confined in the county jail.

During the destruction by fire of the City of Sprague on August 3, 1895, Troop A was called out to protect the property of citizens, which was exposed to theft, until it could be removed and safely stored.

Thus for almost a decade, the Washington National Guard, although only officially established in 1887, proved to the citizen that they had made a sound investment in supporting such a patriotic body of young men.

CHAPTER VIII

WASHINGTON NATIONAL GUARD IN THE PRE-PHILIPPINE INSURRECTION PERIOD

In 1890, General Gibbon was in command of the Military Division of the Pacific and was also listed as commanding the Departments of California and Columbia. The 14th Infantry continued to garrison Fort Vancouver under the command of Colonel Thomas McArthur Anderson, who later served as a Major General during the Spanish-American War. The 4th U. S. Cavalry had replaced the 2nd U. S. Cavalry in the Department and was under the command of Colonel Charles Elmer Compton, stationed at Fort Walla Walla. He was a veteran Indian fighter and later served as a Brigadier General in the Spanish-American War. The 4th Infantry Regiment, under the command of Colonel William Passmore Carlin replaced the 2nd U. S. Infantry at Forts Sherman (formerly Coeur d'Alene) and Spokane. Colonel Carlin had been brevetted for heroism during the Civil War with the rank of Major General. In 1893 he was promoted to Brigadier General of the regular army. The 5th US Artillery replaced the 1st US Artillery and two companies of the regiment were stationed at Fort Canby. One company of the 14th Infantry was stationed at Fort Townsend. A total of 26 companies, batteries and troops were stationed in the Department of the Columbia with a strength of 98 officers and 1,018 enlisted men.

On 27 March 1890, the Act of January 28, 1888 was amended by the State Legislature to provide for the election of the Brigadier General and the Adjutant General by field and line officers of the Washington National Guard. This act was further amended on March 19, 1895 to provide for the appointment of the Brigadier General and the Adjutant General by the Governor, with the consent of the Senate. Company officers, under this change, could be elected by the Petitioners or appointed by the Governor.

The following comprised the staff and senior line officers of the Washington National Guard in 1890: Brigadier General R. G. O'Brien, Adjutant General and ex-officio the Quartermaster General, Commissary General, Inspector General, Chief of Ordnance and Chief of Staff. Brigadier General A. P. Curry was Brigade Commander; Colonel John Charles Haines commanded the First Regiment and Colonel Enoch W. Pike the Second Regiment. Other members of Governor Elisha P. Ferry's Staff were: Col. E. M. Carr of Seattle, Assistant Adjutant General; Colonel Henry Landes of Port Townsend, Paymaster General; Colonel Charles E. Claypool of Tacoma, Judge Advocate General; Colonel W. T. Sharpe of Seattle, Assistant Chief of Ordnance; Colonel Edward Smith of Seattle, Surgeon General; Colonel J. R. Hayden of Seattle, Assistant Inspector General; Colonel J. Kennedy Stout of Spokane Falls, Chief Signal Officer; Colonel J. D. McIntyre of North Yakima, Chief of Engineers; Colonel Will L. Visscher of Fairhaven, Assistant Commissary General; Colonel Frank T. Gilbert of Walla Walla, Assistant Quartermaster General; Lieutenant Col. Albert Whyte of Steilacoom, Assistant Commissary General; Lieutenant Col. H. F. Garretson of Tacoma, Assistant Quartermaster General; Lieutenant Col. Clinton P. Ferry of Tacoma, Aide-de-Camp to the Commander-in-Chief; Lieutenant Col. L. Frank Boyd of Spokane Falls, Aide-de-Camp to the Commander-in-Chief; Lieutenant Col. C. Reichenbach of Tacoma, Aide-de-Camp to the Commander-in-Chief; Lieutenant Col. C. M. Atkins of Whatcom, Aide-de-Camp to the Commander-in-Chief; and Major Charles H. Ayer of Olympia, Assistant Adjutant General and Military Secretary.

The First Regiment in 1890 was composed of the following companies: B at Seattle; C at Tacoma; D at Seattle; E at Seattle; F at Whatcom; G at Tacoma; H at Vancouver; and K at Aberdeen. Companies of the Second Regiment were: A at Ellensburg; B at Goldendale; C at Centerville; D at Waitsburg; E at North Yakima; F at Dayton; G at Spokane Falls; and H at Pomeroy. The First Cavalry composed of Troop A at Sprague and Troop B at Tacoma was commanded by Major Charles B. Johnston of Spokane Falls.

Attendance at the annual muster and camp of instruction in 1890 was governed by the following:

GENERAL HEADQUARTERS NATIONAL GUARD OF WASHINGTON

Adjutant General's Office

GENERAL ORDERS NO. 4

Olympia, Washington. June 1890

1. The First Brigade, National Guard of Washington. Brigadier General A. P. Curry, Commanding, will hold an annual muster and camp of instruction on the 20th day of June, inst., at or near American Lake, in Pierce county, for the period of ten (10) days from said date.

2. Transportation will be furnished from the respective companies to the camp ground. Subsistence will be furnished by the Regimental commissaries for one day while enroute. Requisitions will at once be made to, the Regimental Commissaries for the number of rations required for the tour of duty. Transportation for the Second Regiment will be so arranged that Colonel E. W. Pike, Commanding, will meet his command, together with Troop A, First Cavalry, at Pasco, on the 19th. inst., and will take up the company at North Yakima and proceed on their way to Tacoma. Captains of companies will at once report the number of men that will probably answer for this tour of duty. The Second Regiment, on its arrival in Tacoma, will be joined by the First, and together will proceed to the place of encampment. Colonel J. C. Haines, commanding, First Regiment, will make a detail of twenty (20) men from his command, with one sergeant and two corporals, to report to the quartermaster of his regiment, who will proceed on the 18th inst., with two day's rations, to the camp ground and layout and establish the camp, reporting to Lieut. Col. H. F. Garretson, A. Q. M., at Tacoma, for instructions. Commanding officers of regiments and troops, Cavalry, will at once report by telegraph to these headquarters the number of men and horses for which transportation will be necessary. Captains of Cavalry companies will furnish one day's rations and forage for their men and horses from their headquarters to the place of encampment, and will keep a correct account of same and present all claims to the Adjutant General, duly verified.

3. The following hours of service and roll calls are thereby established for the encampment of 1890:

Reveille (assembly of trumpeters)	5:30 A. M.
Stable Call and assembly for roll callimmediately after Reveille
Breakfast Call	6:30 A. M.
Sick Call.....	7:00 A. M.
Fatigue Call.....	7:30 A. M.
School of Officers.....	7:30 A. M.
Guard Mounting.....	8:30 A. M.

Guard details (assembly of trumpeters). At this call the guard details will form and be inspected by the First Sergeant, and the band will march to the Regimental parade.

Adjutant's Call.....	8:45 A. M.
----------------------	------------

To be sounded by all the trumpeter (at signal of the Adjutant), followed by a march from the band. At this call the guard details will be conducted to the Regimental parade by the First Sergeant.

Re-Call from fatigue (by musician of guard)	9:15 A. M.
---	------------

Water Call	9:30 A. M.
------------------	------------

Battalion Drill (assembly of trumpeters)	
--	--

Drill Call (Boots and Saddles)	10:00 A. M.
--------------------------------------	-------------

Assembly	Immediately after drill call
----------------	------------------------------

Adjutant's Call	10:05 A. M.
-----------------------	-------------

To be sounded by all the trumpeters (followed by the march). At this call all the companies will be marched to the regimental parade to form the battalion line; after which music will form for practice.

Recall from drill (by musician of the guard)	11:30 A. M.
--	-------------

First Sergeant's Call	11:45 A. M.
-----------------------------	-------------

Dinner Call	12:00 M.
-------------------	----------

School Call (non-commissioned officers)	1:30 P. M.
Drill Call for skirmish drill, by companies or regiments	2:30 P. M.
Assembly	Immediately after drill call
Re-call from drill (by musician of the guard)	4:00 P. M.
Stable Call	4:30 P. M.
Supper Call	5:00 P. M.
Dress Parade (assembly of trumpeters)	5:45 P. M.
Adjutant's Call (to be sounded by all the trumpeters)	6:00 P. M.
At this call the Adjutant and the Sergeant Majors of the regiments and the band (the latter playing) will march to the Regimental parade, and the battalion line formed.	
Retreat	At sunset
At dress parade, retreat is sounded after the return of the band to its position in line. When there is no dress parade, the band assembles at the first call for retreat, and the companies form for roll call the same as at reveille and tattoo.	
Band Practice	7:00 P. M.
Tattoo (assembly of trumpeters)	9:30 P. M.
Roll Call	Immediately after Tattoo
Taps (by musicians of the guard)	10:00 P. M.

4. The assembly of trumpeters will be sounded ten (10) minutes before all stated roll calls, except reveille and dress parade, which will be fifteen (15) minutes before.

5. Sunday inspections will take place at 8:00 A. M., and divine service at such hours as may be ordered by the Brigade Commander. There will be no drills on Sunday. Morning reports must be sent to the office or the regimental adjutants by 8:00 o'clock A. M. Regimental surgeons will send their sick reports by the same hour. The reports of regiments and battalions must be in the office of the commanding officer of the camp at 9:00 A. M. at the latest, accompanied by the reports of the companies and troops.

6. Schools of instruction will be ordered by company officers of the respective companies. If the weather or other circumstances make it necessary to omit drills, immediately after the first hour for drill the guard details which came off duty the preceding day will be assembled and thoroughly police the camp. The officer of the guard is charged with the prompt sounding of calls. When (for any purpose) drill is suspended, re-call from drill will be immediately sounded after the first call for drill.

7. Challenging will commence at Tattoo and cease at Reveille.

8. Brigadier General A. P. Curry will command the camp.

9. No intoxicating liquors shall be sold on or near camp ground.

* * * * *

BY ORDER OF THE COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF :

B. G. O'BRIEN, ADJUTANT GENERAL

Pursuant to a practice which was prevalent in other States, Governor Ferry requested General Gibbon to detail a regular army officer as inspector and military instructor for this encampment. The following are extracts from the report of the officer so detailed and General Gibbon's comments thereon:

VANCOUVER BARRACKS, WASH. , July 25th, 1890

Assistant Adjutant General, U. S. A., Headquarters Department of the Columbia:

Sir: In compliance with the instructions from the Commanding General, Department of the Columbia, dated June 22d, 1890, I have the honor to report that on that date I reported by letter to Hon. E. P. Ferry, Governor of Washington, at Olympia, for duty as inspector and military instructor during the duration of the camp of the National Guard of Washington. On the same date Lieutenant W. K. Jones of Fourteenth Infantry, and myself proceeded by rail to Tacoma, reaching there at 6 A. M. June

23rd. Finding no one there to meet us we then proceeded to the camp at American Lake, 12 miles from Tacoma via the Lake City and Tacoma Railway, reaching there at 10 A. M. Not finding any instructions there, I reported our arrival to Governor Ferry by telegraph, and on June 24th. received from him a dispatch to report to Adjutant General R. G. O'Brien at Camp Ferry. This I did, and by him was directed to report to Brigadier General A. P. Curry, commanding the camp. When reporting to General Curry I stated to him that Lieutenant Jones and myself were there to assist him in whatever way he might desire, and by him was requested more particularly to superintend the drill of the regiments.

The camp was well selected being situated on an almost level plateau with a slight depression toward the south and some 20 feet above the level of American Lake, fringed on the east and south with heavy timber and having a second lower level hundreds of acres in extent free from timber and fencing, suitable for drilling large bodies of cavalry, artillery or infantry. The camp was named Camp Ferry in honor of His Excellency, Governor E. P. Ferry. The railway station of the Lake City and Tacoma road is situated about 400 yards east of the camp. Telephone and telegraph wires run along about the same distance from the western side. The sub soil is gravel covered with light turf and the camp therefore, naturally well drained. If the ground could be purchased by the state before the price has risen too high, and some permanent improvements made in the matter of a water system, kitchens and closets, the camp could be made an ideal one at a slight expense. Water for all purposes is taken from the adjacent lake which is fed by springs, and it is pure, wholesome and free from objectionable matter.

*	*	*	*	*	*
Aggregate of troops in Camp:					
Officers					70
Men					<u>492</u>
Total					562

Of these troops none of the companies had been assembled as battalion organizations except the three companies of the First Regiment that are located at Seattle, and, as a consequence, were not familiar with battalion drill. In the Second Regiment, from the regimental district east of the Cascade mountains, one of the companies was organized but two days prior to its departure for Camp Ferry. Under these circumstances it would be unjust to criticize the proficiency or the regiments as to drill in battalion movements. In the school of the soldier and the company, however, they were well instructed. At the request of the brigade and regimental commanders, I gave them oral instructions and drilled each organization one and one half to two hours daily in battalion movements, it being preferred that the available time should be devoted to movements that could not be executed in the company armories. Lieutenant Jones acted as adjutant, and I was much surprised, as well as gratified, at the interest and desire to learn exhibited by all, from the commanders to the privates, making instructions under such circumstances a veritable pleasure. The rain interfered somewhat with drill during the first three days; but the camp was a working one, and every opportunity was taken advantage of the improvement was very marked and rapid, and the condition of the command as to drill at the close of the encampment very satisfactory.

The discipline of the command, for new troops, was excellent; there was an absence of fault finding or discontent; all were well disposed and enthusiastic. Salutes, although not always correctly, were willingly rendered, and the errors arose from a want of knowledge and not from the lack of courtesy. Orders given were promptly executed and obeyed. More attention should have been given to the minor details of guard duty - sentries not carrying their pieces nor walking post properly; but disposed to loiter and talk to each other while on post.

The police work of the camp, which the first few days, in consequence of the rain, was but imperfectly performed, improved during the last four days, companies vying with each other as to the cleanliness of the company streets and surrounding grounds. Latrines were carefully attended to.

Camp accommodations were very unequal. The First Regiment, located near the camp ground, had sent a camping party ahead, the tents were floored and bed-sacks filled, and ranges and cooking facilities prepared. Equipage for the Second Regiment was sent from Vancouver Barracks. It arrived on the same train with the troops. It was ample but very many of the tents had no floors - a necessity in a permanent camp - and many simply the straw without the bed-sack. They were dependent upon the First Regiment for messing facilities. The food was sufficient in quantity and as a rule good in quality and well cooked. Sickness in camp was light, and mainly due to the eating of fruit not fully ripe. The want of due preparation was owing to the fact that the date fixed for the assembling of the troops, originally in August, was from necessity changed to June, but a few days prior to June 20th. The limited cooking facilities rendered the messing of the troops unsatisfactory. At the encampment of state troop tents should be pitched and floored and bed-sacks filled before the troops arrive, and as the time is limited and the preparation of food a distasteful duty and one which these troops have neither the desire nor the intention to familiarize themselves, the cooking and messing of troops should rather be a matter of contract with professional caterers who understand the business and are prepared beforehand to fulfill all its requirements based upon a fixed bill of fare for each meal, and the meals subject to a rigid inspection by the officer of the day, at the time they are served.

On Thursday, June 26th, the troops were reviewed by His Excellency E. P. Ferry, Governor of Washington, and on Friday by Brigadier General John Gibbon, U. S. Army, commanding the Department of the Columbia. Both ceremonies passed off in a creditable manner. On Saturday, a sham battle having been decided upon, it was conducted in the simplest manner possible, in consequence of the want of knowledge of tactical formations on the part of troops and the miserable condition of the arms in the hands of several of the companies and of the two 6-pound guns, which I regarded as unsafe to use, as they needed rebushing and neither priming wires nor friction primers were on hand or could be obtained owing to the limited time. I deemed essential to run no risk of accident at this the first state encampment. The affair however, seemed to give general satisfaction, passed off without accident to anyone and amused the public.

* * * * *

I cannot close this report without bearing testimony to the zeal, energy and exceptionally good conduct of the state forces during this encampment. I did not see a single case of drunkenness nor hear profanity nor improper language at any time during my tour of duty with them, but every one seemed anxious to avail himself of the opportunity to acquire a knowledge of his military duties. I desire to also acknowledge on behalf of Lieutenant Jones and myself, our indebtedness for the many courtesies received from all the officers in camp, especially from Adjutant General R. G. O'Brien and General A. P. Curry, who, by kindly consideration and urbanity, did so much to promote that harmony of command which is so essential to discipline.

Should the general government ever call upon the State of Washington for troops, I feel sure that the call would be promptly answered and by the best of soldierly material.

I am, sir, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

F. E. TROTTER, Capt., 14th Infantry

True Copy - Thomas Ward, Assistant Adjutant General

HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF THE
COLUMBIA

Vancouver Barracks, Washington, August 13, 1890

Brigadier General A. P. Curry, Commanding First Brigade, N. G. W. Spokane Falls, Wash.

General - I have the honor to submit, for your information, the inclosed comments made at the recent review of your brigade.

These comments are not intended as a critical review of the performance of the brigade, but simply to invite your attention to certain defects, which being remedied will improve the efficiency and

appearance of your troops. Hence but little reference to the creditable features of the review will be made, the remedy for little defects being the great object in all such reviews and inspections.

These comments are made, I hardly need to say, in the most friendly spirit and with the heartiest wishes for the perfection of your very creditable organization.

I take great pleasure, also, in transmitting for your information the very satisfactory report of Colonel (brevet) Trotter of the observations made by that officer during his tour in your camp of instruction last June.

The interest shown by your command in the duties of the military service give ample promise of future efficiency.

I am, General, very respectfully yours.

JOHN GIBBON, Brig. Gen., U. S. Army

COMMENTS

The appearance of the men and their carriage indicated the want of setting up drill.

The belts were in some cases improperly adjusted, being too loose and sagging.

Cartridge-boxes were generally worn over the middle of the back instead of over the right hip.

Some of the gloves were soiled and far from neat.

Helmets fitted poorly.

One regiment (2nd) was not at attention while the reviewing officer was passing

In coming to a carry arms, in the motion next to the last, the left hand was not always brought to the height of the shoulder with the fingers extended and joined.

In support arms, the forearm was not horizontal with the wrist straight.

At the order arms, the right hand was held improperly and carelessly; it was not turned to the right with the fingers extended and joined.

In marching, the file closers to pay proper attention to the position of the men and their arms.

The officer's salute with the sword was ragged - one officer saluted as prescribed for non-commissioned officers armed with the sword.

Very poor provision was made for sinks for the command.

Little attention was paid to policing of camp outside of the company streets.

The following is the minutes of convention called for the election of the Adjutant General and the Brigadier General of the Washington National Guard:

NORTH YAKIMA, WASHINGTON

October 6, 1890

Colonel J. C. Haines, Commanding. First Regiment, First Brigade, National Guard of Washington, Seattle, Washington.

Colonel - I have the honor to hereby report the proceedings of the convention of field and line officers of the National Guard of Washington, held at this city, this date, for the purpose of electing a Brigadier General and an Adjutant General, as required by the recent act of the state legislature, and do hereby submit this as the returns of the election held at such convention.

I report in this manner, and submit the returns as a part of my report on account of the statute being silent as to the manner in which the returns should be made up, and it being impracticable to accurately apply the system of election returns adopted in the election of the civil officers of the state.

The convention was called to order at 10:00 A. M. by Colonel J. C. Haines, the presiding officer of the convention. An organization was perfected by the election of Captain J. M. Ashton as secretary.

It was then moved by Captain W. G. Wadhams, and seconded by Captain Joseph Greene, that a committee on order of business, consisting of three members, be appointed by the chair. Captain R. S. Reinhart seconded the motion, and the same being put to vote, was unanimously carried.

Lieutenant A. W. Lindsay then introduced a resolution declaring it to be the sense of the convention that a majority of the votes cast be necessary to elect, and moved the adoption of such resolution. Lieutenant J. M. Dougan seconded the motion, and the same being put to vote, was carried.

Thereupon Colonel Haines, the presiding officer of the convention, appointed the following committees:

ON ORDER OF BUSINESS: Lieutenant Colonel John Carr, Captain Joseph Greene and Captain J. C. Westhoff.

ON CREDENTIALS: Major Charles P. Johnson, Captain George H. Jones, and Captain J. C. MacCrimmon.

Upon motion, duly seconded, and carried, the convention then took recess for one-half hour to enable the committees to report.

11:00 A. M. The convention convened after recess, when Major Johnson, the chairman of the Committee on Credentials, stated that all officers present had not yet had sufficient time to fully report to his committee, and asked further time. Whereupon, and upon motion, duly seconded, and carried, fifteen minutes further time was granted the committee to report.

At the expiration of this recess, the convention was; called to order, when Captain Joseph Greene and Captain Westhoff, a majority of the Committee upon Order of Business, reported that the general officers of the Brigade be elected in the following order:

FIRST - An Adjutant General

SECOND - A Brigadier General; that said election be by ballot, and that it require a majority of all votes cast to elect.

Lieutenant Colonel Carr, from the same committee, filed a minority-report, stating that he could not agree with the other members of the committee upon the order of business submitted by them, and recommended that the general officers be elected in the following manner:

FIRST - A Brigadier General

SECOND - An Adjutant General

Lieutenant Colonel Carr, in his minority report, concurred in the other recommendations of the committee.

The Committee on Credentials reported the following officers as duly qualified to vote in the convention, viz:

Co. B, 1st Regt. - Capt. Joseph Greene, 1st Lt. L. R. Dawson, 2nd Lt. L. S. Booth.

Co. C, 1st Regt. - Capt. W. J. Fife, 1st Lt. I. M. Howell, 2nd Lt. James Ross.

Co. G, 1st Regt. - Capt. F. A. Gaus, 1st Lt. W. S. Shank, 2nd Lt. H. K. Relf.

Co. H, 1st Regt. - Capt. J. C. Westhoff, 1st Lt. F. Morris.

Co. I, 1st Regt. - Capt. G. H. Jones, 1st Lt. C. B. Wood, 2nd Lt. N. S. Snyder.

Co. A, 2nd Regt. - 1st Lt. J. T. Becker.

Co. B, 2nd Regt. - Capt. C. S. Reinhart, 1st Lt. R. D. McCully, 2nd Lt. H. C. Jackson.

Co. C, 2nd Regt. - Capt. C. W. Billington, 1st Lt. John Jackel.

Co. D, 2nd Regt. - Capt. H. G. Shuman, 1st Lt. D. W. Smith.

Co. E, 2nd Regt. - Capt. J.C. MacCrimmon, 1st Lt. D. Eshelman, 2nd Lt. M. Bartholet.

Co. F, 2nd Regt. - Capt. E. H. Fox, 1st Lt. C. R. Dorr, 2nd Lt. C. A. Booker

Co. G, 2nd Regt. - Capt. W. G. Wadhams, 1st Lt. J. T. Leghorn, 2nd Lt. L. E. Brigham.

Co. H, 2nd Regt. - Capt. Harry St. George, 1st Lt. E. R. Brady, 2nd Lt. J. W. Murphy.

Troop A - Capt. B. B. Glasscock, 1st Lt. A. W. Lindsay.

Troop B - Capt. J. M. Ashton, 1st Lt. J. H. Barry, 2nd Lt. J. M. Dougan.

Colonel J. C. Haines, Lieut. Col. S. W. Scott and Maj. C. M. Riddell, 1st Regt.

Lt. Col. John Carr and Maj. G. W. Green, 2nd Regt.

Maj. Charles B. Johnston, 1st Cavalry Battalion.

There being forty five officers present and duly qualified to vote, and twenty three votes being necessary to elect, pursuant to a resolution heretofore adopted. The reports of both committees were read by the secretary. It was then moved, seconded, and unanimously carried, that the Committee on Credentials be received and the committee discharged.

A motion was then made and seconded that the minority report of the Committee on Order of Business be adopted; and a vote being taken, resulted in twenty four votes for the adoption of the minority report, and nineteen votes against it. The chair thereupon declared the minority report adopted.

Thereupon General A. P. Curry and Captain J. M. Ashton were placed in nomination for the office of Brigadier General. Whereupon Captain Ashton addressed the convention, stating that he was not, and would not be, a candidate for the office, and retired in favor of General Curry, whose nomination was seconded by Captain Ashton and several members of the convention.

There being no further nominations, the chair declared the nominations closed and appointed Lieutenants Dorr and Howell as tellers, who were directed to prepare the ballots.

The ballots being prepared, and the convention ready for business, the ballots were cast and resulted in General Curry receiving twenty five votes and Captain Ashton twenty votes. Thereupon Captain Ashton moved that the election of General Curry be made unanimous, and the motion, being duly seconded, was unanimously carried; and the Chairman then declared General A. P. Curry duly elected by this convention the Brigadier General of the State of Washington, to serve as such for four years from the first Monday in January, 1891, and until his successor is elected and qualified.

Thereupon Captain E. H. Fox, Adjutant General R. G. O'Brien and Major C. B. Johnston were each placed in nomination for the office of Adjutant General, and the nomination of each was seconded by many of the officers present. Upon the third ballot, Adjutant General O'Brien was duly elected Adjutant General, the vote standing as follows: R. G. O'Brien 24 votes, Capt. Fox 18 votes; Major Johnston 1 vote; Lt. Col. Scott, 1 vote; ----- 1 vote, making 45 votes in all.

Upon motion, duly seconded and carried, the election of General O'Brien was then made unanimous. Whereupon Colonel Haines, the presiding officer, declared R. G. O'Brien duly elected Adjutant General, with the rank of Brigadier General, and entitled to hold his office for the term of four years from the first Monday in January, 1891 and until his successor is elected and qualified.

The officers so elected, being called upon, made appropriate remarks, and there being no further business, upon motion duly seconded, the convention adjourned.

I have the honor to remain. yours very respectfully,

Jas. M. Ashton, Secretary.

The foregoing minutes were certified by Colonel J. C. Haines on the 6th day of October, 1890, and forwarded to the Governor and Commander-in-Chief.

During the 10 days immediately preceding the foregoing convention, Adjutant General R. G. O'Brien had inspected the companies and armories at their home stations. The following report of these inspections presents, the condition of these companies and the difficulties in maintaining them:

GENERAL HEADQUARTERS, NATIONAL GUARD OF WASH. ,
Adjutant General's Office Olympia, Oct. 28, 1890

To: His Excellency, E. P. Ferry, Governor and Commander-in-Chief:

Pursuant to Special Orders No. 13, dated September 9, 1890.***** the following report is submitted:

I proceeded to Tacoma on the 26th day of September, where I was joined by Colonel E. M. Carr, Assistant Adjutant General, and Colonel J. C. Haines, Commanding First Regiment, and on the evening of said day inspected Companies C and G, of the First Regiment, at their respective armories. Company C, commanded by Captain W. J. Fife, I found 27 men in ranks, presenting a soldierly appearance, showing evidences of having received careful instruction. There was, however, some evidence of lack of

attention on the part of the members of the company in the appearance of their equipments. The uniforms and state property in the hands of the company is generally in fair condition. Some of the fatigue blouses and caps are much worn and will have to be replaced in the course of the next year. An opportunity to observe the proficiency in drill by this company was not afforded by reason of the limited space for that purpose in their armory. It is greatly regretted that sufficient interest cannot be manifested by the citizens of Tacoma to secure for all companies in that city an armory capable of accommodating all, and jointly occupied. Closer attention to the form of inspection should have been given by the commanding officer of C Company. Too much hurry, an oversight of details, is always to be avoided. This officer failed in the salutes required.

A visit to the armory of Company G, commanded by Captain Fred A. Gaus, disclosed the state property in the hands of this company to be in better condition than in C company, by reason of the fact that it was practically new, some having been but recently issued. The Captain of a company presented 26 men in ranks, beside file closers, presenting a very soldierly appearance, attentive to the commands of their officers, careful in the adjustment of their equipments, and the equipments themselves bright and clean, as though the officers were not unmindful of their duty in this respect.

Troop B, of the First Cavalry Battalion, not having received a complement of uniforms, arms and equipment, at the solicitation of the commanding officer of the company, were not inspected, but the inspection was deferred until some time later.

Accompanied by Colonel Carr, I proceeded to Vancouver, Washington on Sept. 27th by way of Portland, and inspected Company H, of the First Regiment, which I found composed mostly of men who had served in the regular army of the United States, well up in their duties as soldiers, their equipments clean and orderly, their appearance soldierly, indicating discipline and careful attention to drill. This company is commanded by Captain J. C. Westhoff, who was also a soldier in the regular army of the United States. Some of the property of this company I found very much worn, a number of blouses and trousers being practically of no use, and I would recommend that a board of survey be convened for the purpose of condemning the same with a view to the issue of new clothing. During inspection of this company we were joined by Colonel F. A. Trotter, of the United States Army whom it was our pleasure to meet at the camp of instruction at American Lake during last summer. To him we are indebted for many courtesies and kindly entertainment at the garrison at the close of the inspection.

Returning to the city of Portland the same night, we passed Sunday in that city, from whence, on the following Monday morning, we took train and proceeded to Goldendale, being met at Grant, Oregon, by Colonel E. W. Pike, commanding Second Regiment, who drove us over to Goldendale, at which place I inspected Company B, of the Second Regiment, commanded by Captain C. S. Reinhart. This company I found to be in every way in a condition to meet the ready response from any call that might be made upon them for service by the state, with a few exceptions. A minute inspection of the arms disclosed an absence of firing pins, there being broken firing pins in some of the guns, which I recommend be replaced at the earliest day possible. The uniforms and equipments generally were in good condition. The armory accommodations of this company are first class, and it is gratifying to note a great interest taken in the company by the citizens of Goldendale. Captain Reinhart and his subordinate officers manifested close attention to the duties incumbent upon them, and indicated great care in the discipline and drill, evidenced by the appearance of the company. There were twenty nine men in ranks on the night of the inspection. It may be well to add here that, for the purpose of permitting the members of the Second Regiment, which is largely made up of farmers, the Colonel, commanding the regiment, issued an order relieving them from more than the stated drills until the harvest was all in or until about the 1st of October, which, in view of the circumstances surrounding the personnel of this regiment, I think was a wise measure. After an inspection and drill of the company it was our pleasure to be pleasantly entertained by the members and the citizens of Goldendale at a social gathering in the armory until the wee sma' hours.

Proceeding the next day to Centerville, I inspected the arms and equipment of Company C, of the Second Regiment, commanded by Captain George W. Billington. Here it was my pleasure to note a

great interest in militia matters by the people of this small hamlet. Standing upon the street of this little town, and looking toward the four points of the compass from the eminence upon which we stood, we could see the homes of the members who composed this company ranging in distance from one to ten miles. A substantial evidence of interest taken in this company is manifested by the presence of a large hall built entirely by the company for the drill hall and used for other purposes in connection therewith. Such an armory as might do credit to a city like Tacoma, Spokane Falls or Seattle. The arms and equipments and clothing of this company, I found in serviceable condition.

Leaving Centerville, with good wishes for Captain Billington and his command, we proceeded to Grant, Oregon, where, during the evening, we were joined by Col. E. W. Pike and Captain E. B. Wise, A. D. C., and proceeded to Waitsburgh, leaving Captain Wise at Bolles Junction, who proceeded to Pomeroy to muster a company at that place, pursuant to General Orders No. 10, General Headquarters, Sept. 23, 1890. Arriving at Waitsburgh, we were met by Captain H. G. Shuman and his officers, and received many courtesies at their hands. Inspection of this company disclosed a body of men second to none in the state of efficiency as soldiers, attention, care of equipments and interest in the duties incumbent upon them. Armory facilities being very limited, no attempt was made to display the proficiency of the company in drill. Here also the citizens take a very active interest in maintaining the militia, and show their regard for the citizen soldiery, which signifies a growing interest in the maintenance of the militia.

From Waitsburgh, the next morning, we took the train to Dayton, where we were met by Lieutenant Colonel Burns of the Second Regiment, Captain Fox and officers of his command. Here we found the company practically without a home, except for drilling purposes, the Opera House being used by them for drills once a week. A recent fire at Dayton had compelled the company, in order to accommodate the merchants, to move out of the rooms in which they kept their arms and equipment, storing the same in the court house, a place much more secure so far as preservation of property is concerned, but very inconvenient for drill purposes. Twenty seven men appeared for the inspection. The arms were in fair condition, all complete, with the exception of one gun with the breech block blown out. The clothing of this company is in very good condition. The company, however, is in need of a few supplies to equip the complement of members, which will be issued in due season. Here Colonel E. W. Pike left us and returned home, asking to be excused on account of business requiring attention. Granting his request, the next morning, we returned to Bolles Junction, from whence we proceeded to Spokane Falls.

Arriving at Spokane Falls at 8:30 that evening, we at once proceeded to the armory of Company G, Second Regiment commanded by Captain W. G. Wadhams, where we were joined by General A. P. Curry, Brigade Commander and Major Greene, of the Second Regiment, likewise Colonel J. Kennedy Stout, Chief, Signal Officer of your Excellency's staff, and inspected said company, together with the regimental band. We found the personnel of this company first-class. The attendance in number above the average, such an interest on the part of the officers and men as established an esprit to be emulated. The arms and equipments in first-class condition so far as serviceableness is concerned. The belts and belt plates in many instances, however, were not as bright and highly polished as should have been. The manner of wearing of equipments perfect in every respect. I found an excess of thirty blankets in possession of this company which I ordered returned. I also found they were in need of some arms, uniforms and other supplies necessary to fully equip the company to its full complement of membership. An inspection of the Second Regiment Band disclosed an organization second to none in the state, and one which might be a pride of the regular establishment. Their uniforms, with one or two exceptions, in first class condition. Their proficiency as musicians of an undoubted character, and which reflects great credit upon the organization as a part of the state guard.

From Spokane we proceeded to Sprague, where we were received by Captain Glasscock, commanding Troop A, First Cavalry, and Lieutenant Brooks, aide-de-camp on the staff of the Brigade Commander. This company is armed with .45 caliber breech loading carbine, and regulation saber. They number 40 members. Their arms I found in good condition. The carbine slings and saber, belts I found,

however, to be unserviceable, and recommend that a board of survey be called to report upon the condition of the same, with a view to their condemnation and the issuance of new supplies. The saddles are deficient in this respect: That the stirrup leathers should have an attachment of resedaros to protect the trousers from the sweat of the horse's side as well as tappadarios to cover the stirrup and prevent the foot from slipping through and catching in case of accident. The general manner of wearing the equipments by this company is susceptible to some improvement. The belts should be drawn tighter around the waist; the coats drawn snugly before the belt is fastened on. Drill and discipline evidenced some attention. A little more practice will place the officers in the form of inspection much more at ease. The armory of this company is a commodious room in a substantial brick building, with proper appliances for the care of arms and equipments. This company is in need of the following supplies to complete, their equipments: Forty stable blankets, 40 spurs, 40 stable blouses, 40 stable overalls, 40 pairs of buck gauntlets and 10 canteens.

The following Sunday morning we took the train for North Yakima, where we arrived in the afternoon at 3 o'clock, at which place, on the following Monday, the officers of the N. G. W. hold their convention for the election of a Brigadier General and Adjutant General for four years.

On the evening of Monday, the 6th instant, I inspected Company E, of the Second regiment, Captain J. C. MacCrimmon, commanding. This company was admitted into the National Guard but a few days prior to the annual encampment, held on June 20th last, and appeared in camp with sixty men in rank. It is numerically the strongest company at this date in the service of the state, and made up of the best material in the city of North Yakima and vicinity. The ceremony of inspection, by reason of its "newness of life" was not up to standard, but the desire manifested to become proficient was very apparent. The arms made up of breech loading Springfield rifles caliber .45, pattern of 1873, 1878 and 1884; the uniforms are all new and the company presented a very soldierly appearance. Its defects in drill will be cured in time, and if the interest manifested by officers and men is not abated, in a very short time.

At the solicitation of Col. J. C. Haines, commanding the First Regiment, I deferred an inspection of Companies B, D and E of said regiment, until the 13th day of October, at which time I proceeded to Seattle, where I was again joined by Col. Carr, Assistant Adjutant General, and inspected said companies in the commodious armory erected by the First Regiment Armory Association, and given over to the use of the above named companies of this regiment. These companies were inspected in battalion. They did not present a full membership, but ranged from 28 to 30 members present each, besides their officers. I found the arms to be of the latest pattern of Springfield breech loading rifles, caliber .45 with the Buffington sight. The uniforms of Companies B and E in good and serviceable condition. Some of the uniforms of Company D will admit of services of an inspector or board of survey, to report upon their condition. The uniforms in this company are the oldest in the service of the state, and have seen more wear and tear than those of any other company. Company B is commanded by Captain Joseph Greene; Company D by Capt. C. L. F. Kellogg; and Company E by Captain W. R. Thornell, the latter of whom, through severe illness, was unable to be present, and the company was in command of Second Lieutenant E. S. Ingraham, the First Lieutenant being absent from the city. The three companies above named are greatly to be envied in the possession of a large drill hall, elegant company rooms and commodious accommodations for every purpose that may attend the organization of a military company. The First Regiment Band, numbering 20 members, in their new uniforms presented a fine appearance. A marked improvement was noticeable in this band from the last time it was my pleasure to see it and listen to its music at the camp of instruction. It is undoubtedly one of the finest bands in the state, and is a great credit to and pride of the First Regiment.

* * * * *

I have the honor to be, your obedient servant,

R. G. O'BRIEN
Brigadier General and Inspector General

It may be recalled that under the Militia Act of 1888 a Military Board was created for the purpose of prescribing regulations for the Washington National Guard. The following is of interest inasmuch as it prescribes the By-Laws for the Companies of the Washington National Guard and was prepared by the Military Board and approved by the Governor and Commander-in-Chief:

BY-LAWS OF COMPANY _____, _____ REGIMENT, N. G. W.

Believing that the public safety and the lives and property of our citizens are best protected when a well organized body of militia stands ready to support the police force, we, the undersigned, having formed ourselves into a volunteer military company, adopt the following by-laws, as supplemental to the Military Code of the State of Washington and the rules and regulations of the Military Board.

ARTICLE I

SECTION 1. The name of the company shall be "Company _____. _____ Regiment. First Brigade, National Guard of Washington".

ARTICLE II

SECTION 1. The civil officers of this company shall be a Chairman, a Treasurer, a Secretary and an Armorer.

ARTICLE III

SECTION 1. The Captain of the Company shall be Chairman and preside at all meetings, except at the election of commissioned officers, as is otherwise provided by law. He shall perform such other duties as pertain to the office of Chairman. In the absence of the Captain, the next ranking officer shall act as Chairman.

SEC 2. The Treasurer shall receive and hold in trust all funds belonging to the company, and pay all orders drawn on him by the Secretary, and which is countersigned by the Chairman of the Finance Committee, keeping a correct account with the Secretary of all moneys received or paid out. He shall submit an annual statement of his account with the Secretary, showing the amount of money received and paid out on orders, and the balance on hand, such statement to be made at the last meeting of the company in each April, and at such other times as the company may direct. The Captain of the company is ex-officio Treasurer of the company. He shall, upon retiring from office, deliver to his successor all the books and money in his custody belonging to the company.

SEC 3. The Secretary shall keep a correct roll of the members of this company. He shall keep full minutes of the proceedings of the company, which shall be open to inspection by any member. He shall, within three days after election of every member, inform him officially thereof through one of his proposers. He shall notify every committee, through their chairman, of their appointment, and shall furnish him with all papers and documents that may be necessary for the transaction of the business referred to said committee. He shall furnish the First Sergeant with the roll of membership at each regular drill and parade. He shall open a separate account with each member of the company, charging him with such fines and assessments as may be imposed or levied, and crediting him when such fine or assessment is paid. He shall collect all fines and assessments and money coming to the company, and turn the same over to the Treasurer, taking a receipt for the same. He shall open an account with the Treasurer, charging him with all moneys paid him, and crediting him with all orders drawn upon him. He shall sign all orders drawn on the Treasurer. He shall submit his books and accounts and vouchers annually to the Finance Committee for their examination, on the last meeting of the company in the month of April, and at such other times as the company may direct. He shall render a monthly statement to the company, showing the amounts collected for fines, assessments, or otherwise, together with the names of all members in arrears, with the amounts due from each set opposite their respective name. He

shall preserve all books and papers which may be entrusted to him by the company, and upon retiring from office deliver all company property in his possession or custody to his successor.

ARTICLE IV

SECTION 1. Any able-bodied male inhabitant of _____ county, State of Washington, over the age of eighteen years, and five feet in height, of good moral character, and who will take the oath of enlistment prescribed by law and subscribe to the by-laws of this company, may, upon his election, become a member of the same.

SEC 2. The application for membership shall be in the form prescribed by the rules and regulations of the Military Board, and shall be signed by the applicant and endorsed by two members of the company. The application shall be handed to the Chairman of any regular meeting, and shall thereupon be read to the company. It shall be posted in a conspicuous place in the company room until the next regular meeting. All applicants shall present themselves to the commanding officer of the company within one week after their applications have been presented, and shall attend and take part in such drills and exercises as he shall designate for three consecutive weeks prior to balloting for election for such members.

SEC 3. All elections of members shall be by ballot at any regular meeting subsequent to the presentation of the application; PROVIDING, HOWEVER, that no candidate shall be balloted upon until he shall have complied with the provisions of the section next preceding. Three black balls shall reject the candidate, who, in that case, shall not again be presented for six months.

SEC 4. Failure on the part of the member-elect to take the oath of enlistment and subscribe to the by-laws of the company within three weeks after election and notification shall disqualify him from membership, and his name shall not again be proposed for six months.

ARTICLE V

SECTION 1. Any member absenting himself, without reasonable excuse, from three consecutive drills, or two nonconsecutive monthly meetings, and member absenting himself from parade without a reasonable excuse, shall be liable to be reported for dishonorable discharge. All excuses for absences must be reported to the commanding officer of the company within one week after such delinquency.

SEC 2. Any member neglecting to return his arms, accouterments or other property of the company in his possession to its proper place immediately after using same, and any member who shall improperly interfere with those of another without the permission of the commanding officer shall be fined not less than one dollar, and in addition thereto shall be liable to be reported for court martial.

SEC 3. All notices and orders (except such as required by law to be otherwise given) shall be considered as legally given when the same are posted on the bulletin board of the company.

SEC 4. No member shall receive an honorable discharge until he shall have paid all fines and assessments due the company and shall have returned all property of the company in good order, or properly accounted for the same.

ARTICLE VI

SECTION 1. The annual meeting of this company shall be on the last Monday in April.

SEC 2. The regular business meetings of the company shall be on the last Monday of each month.

SEC 3. Special meetings of the company shall be called by the commanding officer on his receiving a written request, signed by seven members of the company. Posting notice of such meeting on the bulletin board in the company room one week prior to the date thereof shall be sufficient notice to the members of such special meeting.

SEC 4. Eight members at any meeting of this company shall constitute a quorum, and in all transactions not otherwise directed a majority, shall govern. If a quorum shall not be assembled within half an hour of the time appointed for the meeting, those present may adjourn.

SEC 5. The company shall meet for drill each Monday evening at 8:30 o'clock, and at such other times as shall be decided upon by a two-thirds vote of the members present at any regular meeting.

SEC 6. The commissioned and non-commissioned officers shall meet for instruction at such times as the commanding officer may direct.

ARTICLE VII

SECTION 1. The Finance Committee shall consist of the First Lieutenant, First Sergeant and First corporal, who shall examined approve or disapprove of all bills and accounts referred to them, and shall audit the accounts of the Secretary and Treasurer annually, and at such other times as ordered by the company.

SEC 2. Special committees may be appointed by the Chairman of any meeting of the company, for specific purposes, when ordered by the company.

ARTICLE VIII

SECTION 1. The company may levy an assessment upon the members thereof, for company uses, by a two-thirds vote of the entire roll of membership.

SEC 2. The following fines may be imposed, and unless remitted shall be paid to the Secretary:

ABSENCE FROM PARADE

Commissioned Officers	\$3.00
Non-commissioned officers	2.00
Privates.....	1.00

ABSENCE FROM DRILL AND REGULAR MEETINGS

Commissioned officers	1.00
Non-commissioned officers50
Privates.....	.25
Treasurer, Secretary and all members of committees, for neglect of duty, each offense50

SEC 3. All fines for absence or neglect of duty shall be imposed by the Chairman, at regular meetings, on the reading of the monthly report by the Secretary, whereupon the same shall be charged against the offending member. Credits shall be made only by money paid or upon written statement of the commanding officer to the Secretary that such absence and neglect of duty has been accounted for by a reasonable excuse. The Secretary shall keep on file, with other papers of the company, all such orders from the commanding officer.

SEC 4. Members on furlough and members in sick list shall not be subject to fines for non-attendance, but all members shall be subject alike to any assessment that the company may levy.

SEC 5. Any member who permits his arrears to exceed the sum of three dollars shall be debarred from having a vote or voice in any matter coming before the company, and if he fails to liquidate the same within thirty days after having been notified in writing by the Secretary (which notice shall include a copy of this section) he may be reported for dishonorable discharge.

ARTICLE IX

SECTION 1. The following shall be the order of business at all regular meetings of this company.

1. Roll Call
2. Election of officers (when ordered)
3. Reading of minutes of previous meeting
4. Report of recruiting officer
5. Balloting for candidates
6. Presentation of bills and communications
7. Report of Standing Committee
8. Report of Special Committees
9. Reading of Armorer's report
10. Reading of Treasurer's report
11. Reading of Secretary's report
12. Levying of fines
13. Unfinished business

- 14. New business
- 15. Good of the company

ARTICLE X

SECTION 1. No suspension of these by-laws shall be valid at any meeting of the company without the concurrence of two-thirds of the entire membership.

SEC 2. All amendments or additions to these by-laws must be by concurrence of two-thirds of the entire membership of the company at any regular stated meeting, notice of such proposed amendments or additions having been given in writing at a previous stated meeting.

Just prior to the summer encampment of 1892 the strength of the Washington National Guard had increased in strength to 128 officers and 1267 enlisted men. This was due to the addition of three new companies, Company A, First Regiment of Olympia, Company I, Second Regiment of Clyde and Company K, Second Regiment of Tekoa. The camp was held during the period June 22nd to July 1, 1892 at Camp Murray. All units of the Washington National Guard attended with Brigadier General A. P. Curry again commanding the camp. The First Regiment was commanded by Colonel Joseph Greene who succeeded Colonel Haines who died in Seattle on January 2, 1892. Colonel Pike was in command of the Second Regiment and Major Johnston commanded the Cavalry Battalion. The cost of the encampment was as follows:

Pay of Troops.....	\$16,187.92
Transportation.....	6,197.70
Expenses QM Department.....	4,698.05
Subsistence.....	8,073.07
Total.....	\$35,156.69

During this encampment, Brevet Lieutenant Colonel Frederick E. Trotter, U.S. Army, who during the past year had visited all units of the Washington National Guard to conduct rifle practice, died in camp on June 28, 1892 of cerebral apoplexy thus casting the deepest gloom for the balance of the encampment. He had been severely wounded in the lungs during the Civil War resulting in his promotion to Brigadier General of the Volunteers. At the time of his death he was serving as Inspector of Rifle Practice in the Department of the Columbia and had just been detailed by the Secretary of War as Instructor in target practice for the Washington National Guard.

General O'Brien in his report to the Governor stated:

"It was a noticeable and commendable fact that the department of the troops while in camp was of a character to command the highest praise. The most sensitive ear could pass along the line of companies without bring shocked by the use of vulgar and obscene language at any time. This as much as anything else establishes the character of the men who make up the National Guard of this state".

The annual encampment of 1894 was held at Woodland, a station on the Tacoma, Olympia and Gray's Harbor branch of the Northern Pacific Railroad, about four miles east of the city of Olympia on the premises of the Woodland Driving Park Association. The first troops arrived on June 20th, 1894 to prepare the camp. However, due to a railroad strike, only the troops of the First Regiment and two companies of the Second Regiment had arrived by the 27th of June, while General Curry with the balance of the Second Regiment and three troops of Cavalry did not arrive until the 29th of June. The Inspection and Review was not held until July 2nd as a result. Due to the excessive costs in transportation, subsistence, etc, for this large encampment, a deficit was created in the funds of the Military Department and this was the last camp for some eight years. Total cost of the encampment was \$56,355.23 leaving a deficit of \$22,482.53. Attending this encampment for the first time were Troops C and D, First Cavalry Battalion from North Yakima and Spokane Falls, respectively.

On October 1, 1894, the election of the offices of Brigadier General and Adjutant General was held in Tacoma, Washington. Colonel Pike was designated as Inspector of Elections and presided at the meeting. Colonel E. W. Pike and Capt. J. M. Ashton were nominated for the office of Brigadier General, which was won by Captain Ashton by a vote of 36 against 33 for Colonel Pike. General O'Brien, Major Ingraham of the First Regiment and Captain W. A. Kimball, U. S. Army were nominated. On the first ballot, General O'Brien received 31 votes, Major Ingraham 29 and Captain Kimball 9. Captain Frost also received 3 votes. On the second ballot; Gen. O'Brien received 33 votes, Major Ingraham 28, Captain Kimball 4, Captain Frost 3 and Col. Scott 1. On the third ballot, General O'Brien received 33, Major Ingraham 28, Captain Kimball 4 and Captain Frost 5. On the fourth and final ballot, Gen. O'Brien received 36 votes and Captain Frost 34, giving General O'Brien the election for another term as Adjutant General. This was the last election of officers held due to changes in the Military Code in 1895. These same changes also reduced the Washington National Guard which resulted in a wide reorganization. The strength was established at one Regiment of Infantry, one Battalion of Infantry, two troops of Cavalry and one battery of light artillery plus the general staff and medical corps. Units disbanded were Company H, 1st Regiment at Vancouver, Company I, First Regiment at Port Townsend, Company B, 2nd Regiment at Goldendale, Company C at Centerville, G at Spokane Falls, I at Clyde and K at Tekoa. Troop C of North Yakima and Troop D of Spokane Falls were also disbanded as was the unattached company of infantry at Waterville. Roster of the Washington National Guard after this reorganization was as follows:

COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF
HONORABLE JOHN H. MC GRAW

PERSONAL STAFF

NAME	RESIDENCE	RANK	POSITION
C. M. ATKINS	NEW WHATCOM	LIEUTENANT COLONEL	AIDE DE CAMP
MICHAEL MCCARTHY	WALLA WALLA	DO	DO
CLAIR HUNT	SPOKANE	DO	DO
CHARLES E. TAYLOR	TACOMA	DO	DO
PIERRE P. FERRY	SEATTLE	DO	DO
E. C. MCDONALD	OLYMPIA	MAJOR	ASST ADJ GEN & MIL SEC

GENERAL STAFF

FRAZER AUGUSTUS BOUTELLE SEATTLE (Appointed June 15,1895)		BRIGADIER GENERAL	ADJUTANT GENERAL
S. W. SCOTT	SEATTLE	COLONEL	INSPECTOR GENERAL
WELLINGTON CLARK	WALLA WALLA	DO	JUDGE ADVOCATE GENERAL
R. C. WASHBURN	SEATTLE	DO	QUARTERMASTER GENERAL
ALBERT E. JOAB	TACOMA	DO	COMMISSARY GENERAL
JAMES B. EAGLESON	SEATTLE	DO	SURGEON GENERAL
HENRY LANDES	PORT TOWNSEND	DO	PAYMASTER GENERAL
FRED G. PLUMMER	TACOMA	DO	CHIEF OF ENGINEERS
WILLIAM J. FIFE	TACOMA	DO	INSPECTOR OF RIFLE PRAC.

BRIGADE HEADQUARTERS - SEATTLE

E. M. CARR SEATTLE BRIGADIER GENERAL BRIGADE COMMANDER

BRIGADE STAFF

FALCON JOSLIN	SEATTLE	LIEUT. COLONEL	ASST. ADJUTANT GENERAL
L. H. COON	SNOHOMISH	DO	BRIGADE INSPECTOR
WALLACE MOUNT	SPRAGUE	DO	BRIGADE JUDGE ADVOCATE
E. S. ISAACS	WALLA WALLA	DO	BRIGADE QUARTERMASTER
J. A. HATFIELD	SEATTLE	DO	BRIGADE COMMISSARY
ALBERT WHYTE	TACOMA	DO	ASST CHIEF ENGINEER
DONALD V. OLSON	SEATTLE	DO	INSP. OF RIFLE PRACTICE
W. J. C. WAKEFIELD	SPOKANE	DO	CHIEF SIGNAL OFFICER
ASHMUN N. BROWN	TACOMA	FIRST LIEUTENANT	AIDE DE CAMP
W. A. PETERS	SEATTLE	DO	DO

FIRST INFANTRY REGIMENT - SEATTLE
COLONEL JOSEPH GREENE, COMMANDING

STAFF

E. S. INGRAHAM	SEATTLE	LIEUT. COLONEL	BATTALION COMMANDER
J. J. WEISENBEGER	NEW WHATCOM	MAJOR	DO
W. V. RINEHART	SEATTLE	CAPTAIN	ADJUTANT
ARTHUR E. GRIFFIN	SEATTLE	FIRST LIEUTENANT	INSP. OF RIFLE PRACTICE
R. R. BRIERLY	SEATTLE.	DO	COMMISSARY
ALBERT BRYAN	SEATTLE	DO	QUARTERMASTER

COMPANY A

C. S. REINHART	OLYMPIA	CAPTAIN	COMMANDING COMPANY
MARK E. REED	DO	FIRST LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER
ROBERT L. BLANKENSHIP	DO	SECOND LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER

COMPANY B

GEORGE H. FORTSON	SEATTLE	CAPTAIN	COMMANDING COMPANY
M. H. GORMLEY	DO	FIRST LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER
HARVEY J. MOSS	DO	SECOND LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER

COMPANY C

I. M. HOWELL	TACOMA	CAPTAIN	COMMANDING COMPANY
W. F. CLARKE	DO	FIRST LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER
E. A. STURGES	DO	SECOND LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER

COMPANY D

FRANK E. ADAMS	SEATTLE	CAPTAIN	COMMANDING COMPANY
HENRY L. EGELL	DO	FIRST LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER
GEORGE B. LAMPING	DO	SECOND LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER

COMPANY E

LEWIS B. PARSONS	SEATTLE	CAPTAIN	COMMANDING COMPANY
WM. C. MORSE	DO	SECOND LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER

		COMPANY F	
W. C. GREGORY	NEW WHATCOM	CAPTAIN	COMMANDING COMPANY
DANIEL M. BEARD	DO	SECOND LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER

		COMPANY H	
M. F. ELLRICH	VANCOUVER	CAPTAIN	COMMANDING COMPANY

FIRST INFANTRY BATTALION - DAYTON

MAJOR JOHN CARR, COMMANDING

GEORGE B. BAKER	DAYTON	FIRST LIEUT	ADJUTANT
EDWARD C. MILLS	STARBUCK	DO	QUARTERMASTER
HARDY E. HAMM	DAYTON	DO	INSP OF RIFLE PRACTICE
JULIUS C. HUBBELL	ELLENSBURG	DO	COMMISSARY

COMPANY A

J. B. ARMSTRONG	ELLENSBURG	CAPTAIN	COMMANDING COMPANY
ALFRED C. STEINMAN	DO	FIRST LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER
FRANK N. MCCANDLESS	DO	SECOND LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER

COMPANY B

EMORY P. GILBERT	SPOKANE	CAPTAIN	COMMANDING COMPANY
JOSEPH M. MOORE	DO	FIRST LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER
ROBERT A. KOONTZ	DO	SECOND LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER

COMPANY C

WILLIAM B. BUFFUM	WALLA WALLA	CAPTAIN	COMMANDING COMPANY
MORROW C. GUSTIN	DO	FIRST LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER
T. D. S. HART	DO	SECOND LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER

COMPANY D

H. G. SHUHAM	WAITSBURG	CAPTAIN	COMMANDING COMPANY
CHARLES T. SMITH	DO	FIRST LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER
JOHN B. CALDWELL	DO	SECOND LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER

COMPANY E

HARRY ST GEORGE	POMEROY	CAPTAIN	COMMANDING COMPANY
PULASKI O. SEELEY	DO	SECOND LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER

COMPANY F

CHESTER F. MILLER	DAYTON	CAPTAIN	COMMANDING COMPANY
CHARLES A. BOOKER	DO	FIRST LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER
CHARLES B. DORR	DO	SECOND LIEUT	COMPANY OFFICER

LIGHT ARTILLERY

A. H. OTIS	SPOKANE	CAPTAIN	BATTERY COMMANDER
W. L. LUHN	DO	FIRST LIEUT	BATTERY OFFICER
E. K. IRWIN	DO	FIRST LIEUT	BATTERY OFFICER
W. I. HINCKLEY	DO	SECOND LIEUT	BATTERY OFFICER

CAVALRY

TROOP A

MARSHALL S. SCUDDER	NORTH YAKIMA	CAPTAIN	TROOP COMMANDER
FREDERICK T. BRIGGS	DO	FIRST LIEUT	TROOP OFFICER

TROOP B

EVERETT G. GRIGGS	TACOMA	CAPTAIN	TROOP COMMANDER
W. E. BEST	TACOMA	FIRST LIEUT	TROOP OFFICER
GEORGE V. LA FARGE	TACOMA	SECOND LIEUT	TROOP OFFICER

The amendments to the Militia Laws provided for the appointment of the Brigadier General and the Adjutant General. Accordingly on 14 June 1895, the Governor appointed Assistant Adjutant General. Eugene M. Carr, Brigadier General of the Washington National Guard. On the 15th of June, 1895 he appointed Frazier Augustus Boutelle Adjutant General. General Carr was born in Illinois in 1859 and had served as a First Lieutenant of the Vermont National Guard prior to coming to Washington in 1881. He was appointed a Second Lieutenant in Company B of the National Guard of Washington in 1884; First Lieutenant in 1885 and Captain of Company E in 1886. He served with distinction and bravery during the Chinese incident. Adjutant General Boutelle was a regular army officer and served with the First U. S. Cavalry. His biography appears in a previous chapter of this volume. (Chapter III, Page 63)

On 14 January 1897, Governor Rogers replaced Adjutant General Boutelle with James E. Ballaine who also served as his private secretary. Adjutant General Ballaine was born in Iowa on 2 Sept. 1868 and came to Whitman County in 1879. He served as Deputy Auditor of that county from 1888 to 1890 following which he entered the newspaper field. Governor Rogers also replaced Brigadier General E. M. Carr with Colonel J. D. McIntyre of Seattle. General McIntyre was born at Point Fortune, Canada and came to Seattle in 1891. He served as Brigadier General of the Washington National Guard until 15 January 1901 when the position was abolished.

Owing to the limited appropriations made by the legislature of 1897, it became necessary to reduce the number of companies receiving financial assistance to six. Those selected for retention were Companies B of Seattle; C of Tacoma and D of Seattle, all of the First Regiment. Companies B of Spokane and D of Waitsburg of the Second Regiment were also retained along with Troop B Cavalry.

The following companies being desirous of remaining in the service of the State volunteered to maintain themselves, if provided with State uniforms and arms: Companies: E and H from Seattle and Vancouver, respectively; Company A of Ellensburg; Company C of Walla Walla; E of Pomeroy and F from Dayton. Troop A, Cavalry and Battery A, Light Artillery of Spokane also volunteered.

On December 22, 1897 a company of Infantry was mustered into service at Centralia to be known as Company A, Second Battalion, and also volunteered to pay their own expense. Also a company from New Whatcom was mustered in and given the designation as Company E of the Second Infantry Battalion, April 22, 1898.

Thus just prior to the call for troops for the regiment of troops from Washington for the Philippine Insurrection the composition of the Washington National Guard was twelve companies of Infantry, two troops of Cavalry and one battery of Light Artillery with an aggregate strength of nine hundred fifty officers and men.

In the meantime the regular army troops in the Department of the Columbia remained fairly static with the exception of frequent changes in the command thereof. Brigadier General August Valentine Kautz relieved General Gibbon who assumed command of the Military Division of the Pacific in early 1891. The latter was discontinued shortly thereafter leaving only the Departments of California and Columbia. It may be recalled that General Kautz had served with the 4th Infantry and was wounded in an early engagement with the Indians during the Indian Wars of 1855-56. He was in turn replaced by Brigadier General Thomas Howard Ruger who served until 1893. Brigadier General Elwell Stephen Otis

replaced General Ruger and served until 1897 when he was replaced by Brigadier General Henry Clay Merriam, who it may be recalled served with the 2nd US Infantry during the Indian troubles of 1877-78. Colonel Thomas McArthur Anderson replaced General Merriam in 1897 and served until 1898, during which time he was promoted to Brigadier General. He later was promoted to Major General and served as a Division Commander in the Philippines. No other senior commanders are listed for the Department of the Columbia by the War Department in 1898 and 1899. It is therefore assumed that only caretaking detachments were assigned to the various Washington posts during this period, due to the withdrawal of all regiments from the Department of the Columbia for the Philippine Insurrection.

CHAPTER IX WASHINGTON NATIONAL GUARD IN THE PHILIPPINE INSURRECTION

War having been declared against Spain and the President of the United States having called for 125,000 volunteers on the 25th day of April 1898, to serve for two years unless sooner discharged, the State of Washington found her quota of these troops to be one regiment of Infantry. Adjutant General Ballaine desiring to volunteer immediately resigned, effective 24 May 1898 and was replaced by Wm. J. Canton of Waterville. Adjutant General Canton was born in Toronto, Canada on Feb. 6, 1861 and came to Washington State in 1890. He was elected Captain of the First unattached Company from Waterville on October 26, 1892.

The work of organizing the First Washington Regiment, United States Volunteers was commenced without delay by the discharge of all members of the Washington National Guard who desired to volunteer. It may be recalled that at this time the National Guard of the State consisted of parts of two regiments of Infantry, a squadron of cavalry and one battery of light artillery. It was principally from these organizations that the regiment of volunteers was made up. The State military organization at this time had an excellent reputation. This was strikingly evident in the subsequent career of the regiment in the volunteer service. Not only was the discipline of the highest order, but its marksmanship was superior. His excellency John R. Rogers, Governor of the State of Washington, found quite a task on his hands to select from some forty five different voluntary organizations offering their services, the composition of the regiment. He finally selected a system made of just apportionment to the different localities in the State.

The first and most important appointment was the selection of the regimental commander. The position was offered to John H. Wholley, First Lieutenant, 24th U. S. Infantry, by whom it was accepted, with the consent of the War Department. Colonel Wholley was at that time Professor of Military Science and Tactics and Instructor in Civil Engineering at the State University at Seattle. Previously he had served as United States Recruiting Officer for two years. He was born in Salem, Massachusetts on January 13, 1868 and was a graduate of the United States Military Academy of 1890. His appointment as Colonel of the Regiment was April 23, 1898.

A site for the State rendezvous was selected near the city of Tacoma (84th & S. Tac. Way) and was named "Camp John R. Rogers". Colonel Wholley immediately communicated with the various companies of the Washington National Guard which were to form a nucleus for the regiment. Companies were selected from the principal cities as follows: From Seattle, two companies of infantry; from Spokane, one company of infantry and a battery of light artillery, volunteering as infantry; from Tacoma one company of infantry; from Walla Walla, one company of infantry; from North Yakima, one troop of cavalry volunteering as infantry; from Waitsburg, one company of infantry; from Ellensburg, one company of infantry; from Centralia, one company of infantry; from Dayton, one company of infantry; and from Vancouver, one company of infantry. These companies were selected from the many that volunteered their services to engage in the war against Spain. They were ordered to proceed to Camp Rogers, and there report to Colonel Wholley. On the morning of May 1, 1898, twelve companies were assembled at Camp Rogers ready to be mustered into federal service. Capt. Frank Taylor, 14th U. S. Infantry was detailed as Mustering Officer and Captain and Assistant Surgeon John L. Phillips was detailed as medical examiner. The regiment was mustered into service during the period 6 to 13 May 1898, including the Staff.

On the 25th day of May 1898, the President called for additional troops and on the 20th of June, the State of Washington was notified that its quota would be one battalion of Infantry. Pursuant thereto, the two remaining companies of infantry from Pomeroy and New Whatcom, together with two volunteer companies from Tacoma and Waterville, were on the 15th day of June mustered into the Service of the United States, under the command of Major E. H. Fox, of Whitman County. This battalion ordered to Vancouver Barracks for further training was chosen to garrison that post following the withdrawal of the regular troops and remained there until mustered out of service on 28 October 1898.

Prior to the organization of the Separate Battalion, on May 9th, orders had been received to send the First Battalion of the Washington Regiment, under the command of Colonel William J. Fife, to San Francisco, California to report on arrival to the Commanding General, Department of California. This Battalion consisted of Companies A, B, D and E, commanded by Major John J. Weisenberger, and embarked at Tacoma on the Steamship "Senator" on May 10th. After an uneventful voyage, this battalion arrived safely at San Francisco and were quartered in the large brick warehouse of Fontana and Company, afterwards called Fontana Barracks. On May 14th, the Second Battalion, consisting of Companies F, G, I and L, commanded by Major John Carr, received orders to proceed to San Francisco. This battalion also embarked at Tacoma on the Steamship "City of Peking", had a safe and speedy voyage, and upon arrival at San Francisco were also quartered in Fontana Barracks with the First Battalion. On May 24th, Headquarters and Third Battalion, consisting of Companies C, H, K and M, were ordered to proceed by rail to Vancouver Barracks and there take station. They left Camp Rogers on May 25th and arrived at Vancouver the same night at 11:30 o'clock. Colonel Wholley accompanied this contingent.

On June 15th, Company F was ordered from Fontana Barracks to Angel Island to garrison that post, and on July 1st, the remainder of the, Second Battalion, under command of Lt. Col. W. J. Fife proceeded from Fontana Barracks to Angel Island and there went into garrison. Lt. Col. Fife assumed command of that post which was formerly commanded by General Shafter. On June 23rd, the First Battalion, under the command of Major Weisenberger, was ordered to the Presidio of San Francisco and there went into quarters. Following arrival of the Independent Battalion at Vancouver, orders were received directing the Headquarters and Third Battalion to San Francisco. The journey was made by rail and Colonel Wholley reported to the Commanding General of the Department of California on July 25th, from whom he received orders to go into quarters at the Presidio of San Francisco. Prior to the arrival of Col. Wholley and the Third Battalion, it was understood that the Washington Regiment was to be a part of the Expeditionary Forces to the Philippines. Later, however, orders were issued assigning the regiment to the Department of California. However, on Sept. 19th, orders were amended assigning the regiment to the Independent Division, 8th Army Corps then being prepared for service in the Philippines. In the meantime the regiment continued to remain in quarters at Angel Island and the Presidio of San Francisco.

On the 19th of October, the Second Battalion left Angel Island, embarked on the United States Transport "Valencia", steamed out of San Francisco Bay and was on the way to Manila with the advance guard of the Washingtonians. The "Valencia" touched at Honolulu to coal, where a few pleasant days were spent. It arrived at Manila on November 22nd, after a pleasant and uneventful voyage, no accident or serious illness occurring to mar the enjoyment of the trip. On October 28th, Headquarters and the First and Third Battalions left the Presidio of San Francisco, embarked on the United States Transport "Ohio", and at 11:00 o'clock P. M., left the pier and started the long voyage to Manila. The "Ohio" also touched at Honolulu the morning of November 5th, and after coaling, continued on to Manila and arrived there on Nov. 26th, where they were reunited with the Second Battalion.

Prior to the departure of the regiment from San Francisco, Major John Carr of the Second Battalion was found physically disqualified for service thereby creating a vacancy in the grade of Major. Adjutant General Canton resigned on November 30th to accept command of the Second Battalion. Governor Rogers appointed Major E. H. Fox Adjutant General on December 1, 1898. General Fox was born in Georgetown, Pettis County, Missouri in 1855. He entered the service with Company F, Second Regiment of the Territorial Militia on March 5, 1887 as a private. He was elected to 2nd Lieut. on May 1, 1887 and to Captain on Aug. 4, 1890. Reelected Captain on June 25th 1891 he was promoted to Major on June 1, 1892. He resigned in October 1895 and was appointed Major again in 1898 to command the Independent Battalion of Volunteers.

Following its arrival in the Philippines, the First Washington Infantry was assigned to the Second Brigade, First Division, 8th Army Corps and shortly thereafter was reassigned to the 1st Brigade, 1st Division, with General Charles King as Brigade Commander and General Thomas N. Anderson,

Division Commander. The regiment performed its first duty on December 8th, 1898, when it furnished a guard for outpost duty at Blockhouse No. 11.

The following is a list of engagements and skirmishes participated in by this regiment including casualties suffered therein:

	Casualties			Casualties	
	Off	EM		Off	EM
Santa Ana Feb 4-5, 1899			Taguig, Mar 18, 1899		
Killed		12	Wounded		1
Wounded	3	42	Laguna de Bay, Mar 19, 1899		
Paco Church, Feb 5, 1899			Wounded		4
Wounded		1	Pasig, Mar 26, 1899		
Guadalupe, Feb 4, 1899			Killed.	1	1
Wounded		1	Wounded		7
Pateros, Feb 15, 1899			Taguig, Apr 9, 1899		
Wounded		1	Wounded		1
San Pedro Macati, Feb 15-16			Santa Cruz, Apr 10-11		
Wounded		1	Wounded		1
Guadalupe, Feb 18, 1899			Paete-Lumpan, Apr 12-13		
Wounded		3	Wounded		1
Guadalupe, Feb 19, 1899			Taguig, Apr 16		
Wounded		1	Taguig, Apr 20		
San Pedro (Across River)			Wounded		3
Killed		2	Taguig, Apr 27, 1899		
Guadalupe, Feb 22, 1899			Killed		5
Killed		1	Wounded	1	11
Wounded		4	Taguig, May 19, 1899		
San Pedro Macati, Mar 3			Wounded		1
Wounded		3	Morong, Jun 5, 1899		
San Pedro Macati, Mar 4			Killed		1
Wounded		1	Wounded		1
San Pedro Macati, Mar 6			Taguig, June 5, 1899		
Wounded		2	Wounded		1
San Pedro Macati, Mar 7			Taguig, June 12, 1899		
Killed		1	Wounded		1
Wounded		2	Calamba, July 27, 1899		
San Pedro Macati, Mar 13			Wounded		1
Wounded		1			
Pateros Mar, 14, 1899					
Killed		1	Total Killed	1	24
Wounded		1	Total Wounded	<u>5</u>	<u>98</u>
			Totals	6	122

LIST OF THOSE WHO WERE KILLED IN ACTION OR DIED
OF WOUNDS OR DISEASE

NAME	COMPANY	DATE	PLACE	CAUSE
Captain John R. Thompson	Chaplain	Feb 19,1899	Manila	Disease
Captain Geo. H. Fortson	B	Mar 26,1899	Manila	Died of Wounds
Pvt. C. J. Lynch	K	Aug 26,1898	Presidio	Rupture of bladder
Pvt. E. S. Burnham	B	Oct 26,1898	Presidio	Unknown
Pvt. John C. Baggot	E	Oct 20, 1898	Presidio	Unknown
Pvt. Charles Zuger	K	Sep 8, 1898	Presidio	Typhoid Fever
Pvt. Royal E. Fletcher	B	Jan 29,1899	Manila	Typhoid Fever
Pvt. Alan E. Carlyle	I	Jan 16,1899	Manila	Typhoid Fever
Pvt. Earl A. Jeans	I	Jan 26, 1899	Manila	Typhoid Fever
Pvt. Leslie A. Hill	K	Nov 7, 1898	Presidio	Typhoid Fever
Corp. Miles E. Kyger	I	Feb 3, 1899	Manila	Typhoid Fever
Pvt. Daniel T. Kyger	I	Feb 8, 1899	Manila	Typhoid Fever
Pvt. D. Grossman	C	Feb 11, 1899	Manila	Dysentery
Pvt. Henry R. S. Stroud	L	Feb 20, 1899	Manila	Dysentery
Pvt. Milton S. Melse	D	Mar 22, 1899	Manila	Accidently shot
Corp. Henry Leinbacker	G	Mar 29, 1899	Manila	Drowned in Pasig Riv.
Pvt. George B. Fargo	F	Apr 4, 1899	Santa Ana	Dysentery
Corp. Geo. W. McGowen	A	Feb 5, 1899	Santa Ana	Killed in Action
Pvt. R. W. Simonds	A	Feb 5, 1899	Santa Ana	Killed in Action
Pvt. Frank Smith	E	Feb 5, 1899	Santa Ana	Killed in Action
Pvt. Matt H. Cherry	E	Feb 5, 1899	Santa Ana	Killed in Action
Pvt. Albert J. Ruppert	H	Feb 22, 1899	San Pedro	Killed in Action
Pvt. S. C. Harding	I	Feb 5, 1899	Santa Ana	Killed in Action
Pvt. Edward H. Perry	I	Feb 5, 1899	Santa Ana	Killed in Action
Pvt. Alton Rinehart	K	Feb 20, 1899	Guadelope	Killed in Action
Pvt. Walter M. Hanson	L	Feb 5, 1899	Santa Ana	Killed in Action
Pvt. John F. Adams	M	Feb 20, 1899	Guadelope	Killed in Action
Pvt. William C. Courtney	B	Mar 26, 1899	Pasig	Killed in Action
Pvt. Frank A. Lovejoy	C	Mar 17, 1899	San Pedro	Killed in Action
Pvt. Ralph Van Buskirk	E	Mar 15, 1899	Pateros	Killed in Action
Corp. Edward W. Strain	F	Apr 27, 1899	Taguig	Killed in Action
Pvt. Joseph Eno	H	Apr 27, 1899	Taguig	Killed in Action
Pvt. Carl M. Thygeson	D	Jun 5, 1899	Morong	Killed in Action
Pvt. R. H. McLean	A	Feb 27, 1899	Manila	Died of Wounds
Pvt. Wm. C. Hopwood	D	Feb 8, 1899	Manila	Died of Wounds
Pvt. Ralph E. Shearer	E	Feb 6, 1899	Manila	Died of Wounds
Corp. George W. Hovey	H	Apr 28, 1899	Manila	Died of Wounds
Pvt. Clyde C. Woods	H	Apr 28, 1899	Manila	Died of Wounds
Pvt. S. T. Shepherd	H	Jun 18, 1899	USS Relief	Died of Wounds
Pvt. F. C. Buhman	K	Sept 1, 1899	Manila	Disease
Pvt. Spencer D. Swain	E	Oct 27, 1899	Presidio	Disease
Pvt. Robert A. Crystal	F	Aug 26, 1899	Manila	Disease
Pvt. Silas A. Haskin	Ind.Bn.	Jun 21, 1898	Vancouver	Disease

On August 26, 1899, telegraphic orders were received by Colonel Wholley to prepare the regiment to embark on the transport "City of Para". However, due to difficulties of bringing the regiment into Manila, the order was revoked and the regiment was ordered to board the "Pennsylvania". The

regiment left Manila on the 5th day of Sept. and arrived in sight of Japan on the 12th, where they were given shore leave. Moving to Yokohama on the 16th they remained another three days from where they embarked for the United States on the 19th and arrived at San Francisco on the 9th of October after a very rough and tedious voyage.

The regiment was met by Governor Rogers and a delegation of citizens of the State of Washington and was given breakfast in the Ferry building, afterwards marching to the Presidio where they were lunched and entertained.

The regiment was mustered out of Federal Service at the Presidio of San Francisco on 31 October 1899 from where they returned to their homes.

CHAPTER X

ROSTERS OF THE FIRST WASHINGTON REGIMENT OF U. S. VOLUNTEERS

FIELD AND STAFF

John H. Wholley, Colonel, Commanding Regiment
William J. Fife, Lieutenant Colonel
John J. Weisenberger, Major, First Battalion
John Carr, Major, Second Battalion
William J. Canton, Major, Second Battalion
Lewis R. Dawson, Major and Surgeon
William Mc. Van Patten, 1st Lieut. and Asst. Surgeon
Elmer M. Brown, 1st Lieut. and Asst. Surgeon
William L. Luhn, 1st Lieut. and Adjutant
Albert W. Bryan, 1st Lieut. and Regimental Quartermaster
John R. Thompson, Captain and Chaplain

NON-COMMISSIONED STAFF

Joe Smith, Sergeant Major
Emmett T. Robb, Quartermaster Sergeant
Loren L. Day, Chief Musician
William L. Lindsey, Principal Musician
Miles A. DeGolier, Principal Steward
Leonard G. Allis, Hospital Steward

COMPANY "A" OF SPOKANE.

Albert H. Otis, Capt.
Edward K. Erwin, 1st Lt.
Wm. I. Hinkley, 2nd Lt.
Milo C. Corey, 1st Sgt.
Chas. B. Syphert, QM Sgt
Robert A. Fraser, Sgt.
Herman P. Hasler, Sgt.
Walter L. McCallum, Sgt.
Fred L. Titworth, Sgt

Fred R. Bingham, Corp.
Peter M. Gauvrean, Corp.
Walter A. Graves, Corp.
George M. Tuttle, Corp.
William H. Young, Corp.
James A. Timewell, Corp.
Kendall Fellows, Musc.
Morton A. Smith, Musc.

PRIVATES

Ackerman, Wm. C.
Anderson, Arthur E.
Bittliff, Loyal T.
Black, Charles E.
Betts, Robert M.
Brigham, Louis E.
Chapman, Fred
Christianson, Peter
Clark, Robert L.
Cook, Ernest G.
Crerar, George
DeGraff, George F.
Delany, John A.
Delano, Charles F.
Dore, Jerry L.
Dougherty, Joseph E.
Dunn, Stephan A.
Eslick, Oliver P.
Fait, William R.
Fox, Edward
Furman, Edward D.
Gordon, Elmer E.

Green, Charles J.
Gros, George
Gvinstead, Loren D.
Hallinsworth, Ernest C.
Harris, Robert A.
Harrison, William T.
Hicks, Walter W.
Honey, Thomas
Hoppe, Otto H.
Hughes, Albert D.
Hyatt, David
Lemon, Thomas W.
Long, William A.
MacDonald, Alexander J.
Marsh, Arno L.
Marsh, Fred H.
Martin, Harvey J.
May, William A.
McBride, Howard R.
McGowen, George W.
McLean, Richard H.
McNeil, William T.

McNutt, Fred C.
Merriam, Charles H.
Meyers, William A.
Mitchell, John F.
Nickerson, William E.
Nickolls, Walter J.
Norman, Hartley J.
Pierce, James H.
Primley, George E.
Raymond, Daniel
Richhart, Thomas B.
Rivers, Frank
Rolfe, William W.
Russell, William C.
Sowards, Oscar
Spear, Ray
Stenson, Harry
Stephens, John W.
Stiles, George M.
Wizeman, Ernest
Yake, Henry

COMPANY "B" OF SEATTLE

George H. Fortson, Capt.
Matt H. Gormley, 1st Lt.
Harvey J. Moss, 2nd Lt.
John Stringer, 1st Sgt.
Oscar McGee, QM Sgt.
Walter E. Budlong, Sgt.
Wm. D. Covington, Sgt.
Charles Head, Sgt.

James A. Wallace, Sgt.
Clare E. Clark, Corp.
Ray D. Clark Corp.
Frederick, G .S. Herbert, Corp.
Eugene Huckins Corp.
Fred W. Reed, Corp.
Arthur H. Turner, Corp

PRIVATES

Badjer, James W.
Barker, Frank W.
Beamer, Charles L.
Bobet, Adolph L.
Brewer, Merton E.
Brockway, Fred A.
Brown, Charles W.
Brown, Edward R.
Brunjer, Henry C.
Burnham, Edward L.
Carder, Charles H.
Claussen, Charles M.
Clay, William A.
Collon, Thomas
Connor Charles
Corliss, Charles H.
Courtney, William C.
Crockett, Thomas B.
Crye, Marion F.
Doherty, Melvin J.
Downey, William D.
Duncan, William F.
Eldredge, Ray L.
Fenton, Eugene A.
Fisher, Ernest F.
Fitzgerald, Samuel C.
Fitzhenry, James A.
Fitzhugh, Smith K.
Fletcher, Royal E.
Gaches, George H.
Gelwing, Joseph B.

Gorham, Sherwood F.
Gundlach, Fred
Hammon, Adelbert
Harrington, Adoniram W.
Harrington, John
Harris, Adelbert L.
Haslop, George
Heppner, George C.
Hergert, Frank W.
Hunner, John J.
Hunter, Chester E.
Jensen, Irving A.
Keese, Charles W.
Kelly, Daniel W.
Kemper, Herbert J.
Lansberg, Carl
Lynch, Charles I.
Mackay, William F.
Macomber, Fred T.
Maguire, Albert E. W.
McGlenn, John G.
McLean, Hugh G.
Miller, Wm. H.
Mills, Alton M.
Mitchell, Nowal C.
Moran, Wm. J.
Nelson, Eric
Nelson, Hiram H.
Nichols, Howard
Noland, James E.
Page, John M.

Painter, John R.
Paterson, Reginald S.
Pinney, Frank
Pray, Albert T.
Pyncheron, William
Rathbun, Chauncey B.
Redlick, Harry T.
Robertson, Robert Jr.
Rodgers, Grant
Ross, Emery M.
Schmidt, Theodore B.
Sloan, Victor A.
Sly, George L.
Smith, Archie J.
Smith, Edward D.
Smith, Frank W.
Smith, Peter
Snake, John W.
Stein, Charles
Taylor, Ansel O.
Van Gerte, Julius
Vidley, Jack
Waddell, Albert
Ward, Albert D.
Williams, Charles E.
Williams, Edgar T.
Williamson, D. S.
Wilson, William S.
Wood, Fred S.
Wood, William R.
Young, William A.

COMPANY "C" OF TACOMA

Edward A. Sturges, Capt.
Samueal C. Bothwell, 2nd Lt.
John B. McCay, 2nd Lt.
Louis S. Steger, 1st Sgt.
Chas. A. Lulan, QM Sgt.
Charles D. Baker, Sgt.
Carlos G. Jacobs, Sgt.
Martin Johnson, Sgt.

Henry D. Carter, Corp.
Robert E. Golden, Corp.
William L. Gray, Corp.
John H. Meers, Corp.
Robert E. Rankin, Corp.
Woodruff B. Spawn, Corp.
Herman A. Trott, Corp.
Harry O. Robinson, Musician

PRIVATES

Allen, James V.
Baer, Murney E.
Barclay, John W.
Barto, George F.
Blanchard, Frank A.
Blythe, Walter H.
Bordeaux, George
Boyle, Leonard W.
Bowman, Lyman B.
Brittson, Louis E.
Brown, Edwin M.
Brown, Hamilton A.
Burnett, John C.
Clark, Rufus B.
Cody, Frank B.
Coleman, Thomas F.
Corbett, Wilriam J.
Corwin, John H.
Cramer, Edward
Davis, Louis T.
DeAngle, Stanley
Dudley, Robert H.
Dwyer, Edward L.
Easterday, Joseph H.
Evelath, Ralph J.
Fay, Emmett J.
Felton, Henry

Gaston, Fred I.
Graves, Festus L.
Grossman, Damian
Gwyther, Harld
Helms, John F.
Hepler, Ralph
Hilsen, Nils
Johnson, Christ
Johnson, Christ P.
Johnson, Frank A.
Jones, John A.
Kelly, Loring E.
Lafferty, Ferdinand B.
LeCrone, James W.
LeMargie, Edward P.
Lindner, Charles
Linguist, George F.
Little, Artnur M.
Lovejoy, Frank A.
Manning, Lee
McBride, John
McLaughlin, Frank E.
McLean, Frank
Mitchell, Hoyze P.
Mohl, Charles F.
Morrison, A.G.
Mullen, Harry

Nicholson, Roy H.
O'Gara, John F.
Pearson, Oscar H.
Pittwood, George G.
Prochnan, Gustave F.
Reichett, Alfred B.
Richardson, Leonard A.
Robison, Ralph M.
Rogers, Charles
Simmons, John W.
Smith, Harry D.
Smith, Joseph A.
Spencer, James
Styer, Harry T.
Taylor, Edward D.
Udell, Fred A.
Vanderbilt, William H.
Vogel, Lewis C. P.
Wadsworth, Edward E.
Warner, Fred W.
Westgord, Tony
Wilkeson, Ritter S.
Wray, Arthur F.
Wyland, Charles R.
Young, Fred L.
Zehnder, August

COMPANY "D" OF SEATTLE

Frank E. Adams, Capt.
Henry L. Egell, 1st Lt.
George B. Lamping, 2nd Lt.
Z. B. Rawson, 1st Sgt.
Walter F. Clough, Sgt.

Frank M. Combs, Sgt.
Ernest Crocker, Sgt.
William G. Hermann, Corp.
Fred Cuff, Musician

PRIVATES

Ayres, Frank
Baker, Bert
Balduc, George
Bartlett, Edward R.
Beck, William A.
Becker, Nicholas
Bennett, Clarence E.
Bolles, Stephen D.
Bright, John
Brown, C. Graham
Burt, George K.
Cameron, Harry F.
Caswell, Walter H.
Church, Rodney S.
Coburn, Henry H.
Davis, Edwin J.
Day, Fred C
DeJorup, Peter
Dick, Robert
Douglas, Fred L.
Dyer, Harvey H.
Elsbree, Harry E.
Emmonds, William
Fairbank, Wm. H.
Frazier, Frederick A.
Freeman, Alvin W.
Griffith, Jay A.
Hadley, George D.
Hedrick, Harry W.
Hendel, Frank G.
Hermann, George H.
Hickox, Orin W.
Hicks, William H.
Hoburg, Frank T.

Hoffman, Frank
Holland, H. M.
Hopwood, William C.
Hulbert, Harry H.
Jenner, Ernest C.
Jones, Thomas E.
Judergard, Peter M.
Justi, Walter M.
Keil, Ernest M.
Klemptner, Eugene
LaMar, Joseph W.
Land, Charles S.
Lawson, Laurin L.
Lincoln, William J.
Marshall, William J.
McCarron, James
McIntyre, William S.
McMichael, Randolph
Meier, Frank X.
Melse, Milton S.
Merritt, Albert W.
Mihills, Charles G.
Mills, Clay G.
Moore, James H.
Moore, Robert J.
Morrison, Ethan A. E.
Ness, Henry O.
Otsburg, Elsie F.
Page, G. R.
Pallow, William L.
Penington, Carl A.
Perkins, Charles O.
Peterson, Emil
Peterson, George P.

Phelps, Guy A.
Pitt, Charles C.
Polley, Nickolas C.
Reilly, Edward
Roberts, Ernest R.
Roe, Russell
Rowley, Luther W.
Sakemiller, True O.
Sanford, George J.
Sargent, William S.
Smith, Albert L.
Spear, Leonard P.
Straub, Albert H.
Swift, John R.
Tanner, Thomas
Taylor, Wallace B.
Tennyson, Lathe E.
Thygesen, Carl M.
Titus, William O.
Walters, Hugh
Welch, Alfred B.
Wightman, Percy L.
Wilbon, Cal
Winders, William M.
Winkler, George C.
Winters, Fred C.
Witherspoon, John K.
Woodin, Eugene A.
Woods, Harry F.
Worth, George S.
Yore, Clement
Young, Charles

COMPANY "E" OF NORTH YAKIMA

Marshall S. Scudder, Capt.
Fred T. Briggs, 1st Lt.
William L. Lemon, 2nd Lt.
John T. Alderson, 1st Sgt.
Henry W. Leach; QM Sgt.
James N. Scott, Sgt.
Clyde W. Stewart, Sgt.
John Howard Wright, Sgt.

Edward J. Young, Sgt.
Charles K. Brown, Corp.
John L. Druse, Corp.
John M. McCleary, Corp
Albert M. Ross, Corp.
Alfred T. Shannon, Corp.
James W. Spahr, Corp.

PRIVATEES

Adams, James S.
Allen, Charles M.
Aylworth, Frank H.
Baggott, John C.
Boyer, Paul K.
Brasselle, Henry R.
Bruce, William H.
Bunce, Ulysses G.
Cameron John
Cherry, Mathias H.
Converse, Allen
Coombs, Harry F.
Corder, William T.
Crimmins, Con
DeWitt, Don
Douglass, Arthur W.
Dillon, Frank E.
Dowell, Charles L.
Drake, Raymond
Drake, Stephen P.
Driscoll, William
Engelhard, Max E
Forward, Chancey
Fox, Walter P.
Friend, Jesse E.
Gibson, Oral F.
Gosling, Charles
Greene, Curtis S.
Grover, Elmer E.
Hagedorn, Henry H.
Hanson, Edwin
Harkness, Claude W.

Hawley, Harry O.
Hazard, Howard D.
Hill, Harley J.
Horn, Christian O.
Howland, Clarence M.
Jennings, Horatio R.
Jost, Peter J.
Kane, John
Kelsay, William A.
Lahar, George T.
Leeper, Herman L.
Leeuwrick, Gerrit
Lippincott, Francis B.
Madison, Howard H.
Mathieson, Paul W.
McDonald, Leo
Millican, Frank H.
Mitchell, Joseph J.
Niles, Charles A.
Nunnally, George W.
Oakey, Raymond W.
Osborn, Herbert L.
Palmer, George S.
Patterson, William A.
Peel, John R.
Perkins, Walter A.
Reichert, George B.
Roberts, Harry E.
Rodes, Frank
Sampson, William J.
Sandmeyer, Joseph J.

Schaeffer, William J.
Schoenhals, William
Schwartzberg, Fred C.
Scott, Tom H.
Selman, Martin B.
Sexton, George S.
Shearer, Ralph E.
Sherwood, Fred T.
Smith, Cecil N.
Smith, Frank N.
Stair, Dean D.
Stephen, William C.
Spaulding, Edward C.
Steele, Frank E.
Stows, Herbert F.
Swain, Spencer D.
Tomberlin, John E.
Triplett, James G.
Troy, Mart
Vanbuskirk, Ralph E.
Waddington, Amos H.
Waddington, Elyah W.
Walker, Peter P.
Wall, David B.
Washburn, William
Westfall, Oliver A.
Wilgus, C. T. Gray
Williams, Harry A.
Wimer, Charles H.
Wimer, John J.
Woolsey, Frank W.

COMPANY "F" OF DAYTON

Chester F. Miller, Capt.
Charles A. Booker, 1st Lt.
George B. Dorr, 2nd Lt.
George Wick, 1st Sgt.
Jesse G. Miller, QM Sgt.
Claude Beckett, Sgt.
James Dolan, Sgt.
William H. Dorr, Sgt.

Francis J. Gayman, Sgt.
Geo. W. Baldwin, Corp.
Horace W. Bigelow, Corp.
John W. Gaugh, Corp.
Chester A. Morris, Corp.
Edward W. Strain, Corp.
Ray W. Thompson, Corp.

PRIVATEES

Ankeny, Nesmith
Armstrong, Ernest
Baldwin, Francis M.
Burks, Melvin W.
Conwell, Earl H.
Conwell, Lawson
Dale, Alfred D.
Day, William C.
Dennis, John W.
Diers, Charles C.
Dittmore, John L.
Dobbs, Edward B.
Dodge, Wesley F.
Dunning, Hugh J.
Eckler, George C.
Elliott, Arthur R.
Embree, Virgil E.
Fargo, George B.
Ferguson, Emerson E.
Fitzgerald, David H.
Gammon, Walter
Garner, Charles S.

Hammond, Ransom T.
Henderson, James M.
Hicks, Frederick E.
Holman, Ernest A.
Hughes, Bert W.
Hubbard, Will
Hull, Cyrus Eugene
Jackson, Charles C.
Jackson, Jesse T.
James, William A.
Jones, Guy H.
Kliugamon, Frank E.
Liechte, Charles J.
Liner, John C.
Lyon, John J. M.
Machey, Joseph M.
Matzyer, Tracy B.
McGlothliri, Wesley P.
Mustard, George O.
Neal, Robert J.
Norton, John E.
Offield, Lafayette V.

Patrick, William W.
Patterson, John T.
Pettyjohn, Thomas D.
Ping, Albert
Polen, Franklin
Porter, Henry L.
Rowley, Clarence R.
Sagar, George W.
Sherry, Oliver E.
Smith, Walter E.
Snider, John F.
Stedman, Isaac T.
Swimey, Frank L.
Taylor, Fred
Thompson, Sidney E.
Thompson, Thomas
Watson, William
Whitsett, John J.
Wick, Martin A.
Woodworth, Elmer H.
Zebley, John W.

COMPANY "G" OF VANCOUVER

Max F. Ellrich, Capt.
Wm. V. Rinehart, 1st Lt.
Wm. E. Weigle, 2nd Lt.
James H. Reed, 1st Sgt.
Oliver J. Clancy, QM Sgt
George A. Bundy, Sgt.
Walter Cochet, Sgt.
Henry A. Reigle, Sgt.
James W. Sayre, Sgt.

Arthur H. Fletcher, Corp.
Thos. M. Geoghegan, Corp.
Toby L. Hendrichsen, Corp.
John H. Moore, Corp.
William W. Rinehart, Corp.
Nelson T. Herbert, Muscian
Charles H. Weston, Musician
Frank L. Huston, Artificer
Jos. W. Trotter, Wagoner

PRIVATEES

Armstrong, James F.
Austin, William L.
Barlow, John C.
Benedict, Edward L.
Benham, Henry
Bird, George F.
Booth, John H.
Brady, Thomas
Brant, Louis J.
Bremen, William H.
Brown, James J.
Bugbee, Arthur S.
Burke, Walter E.
Bush, Harold A.
Butt, Arthur C.
Buttner, William W.
Cairns, John
Carpenter, Frank F.
Clancy, Nicholas T.
Clark, Ralph H.
Cochran, Arthur
Comerford, Austin
Dayton, Howard A.
Dobman, Joseph
Duncan, George M.
Faulkenberg, Ferdinand
Fleming, Harry J.
Foster, George W.
Geoghegan, Nicholas J.

Goddard, Joseph E.
Habrie, Jule
Hall, Charles W.
Hardtke, Herman G.
Hasson, John P.
Hatt, Frank W.
Healy, Edward J.
Hill, Guy M.
Johnson, Robert J.
Kays, Martin L.
Kays, William J.
Lawrence, Frank
Lawrence, Samuel H.
Leinbacher, Henry
Lepper, Frank A.
Loeber, Julius F.
Lyons, John
Manly, William C.
Manning, Albert H.
Marks, Julius
McCarty, Michael P.
McIneverney, Michil
Mettler, Romulus
Miller, Harry P.
Miller, William J.
Mills, Arthur C.
Mills, George M.
Moody, Clarence E.
Morin, Robert E.

Northrup, Arthur C.
O'Connell, Joseph
O'Donnell, Joseph
Pahe, John G.
Parcel, Roy B.
Plaice, Ernest W.
Ranck, Glen W.
Ray, Oscar
Rebholz, Aloysius J.
Reigger, Emil
Rinehart, David G.
Russell, L. Clement
Sayle, James T.
Scribner, William L.
Shumate, Ora B.
Sickel, William H.
Simmons, Charles
Smith, Leo B.
Spray, Fred C.
Spurgeon, George A.
Strohn, Goerge W.
Temples, Frederick W.
Tooley, Charles D.
Trisler, Joseph
Waite, George B.
Walker, Hiram A.
Wilson, Ralph G.
Woolf, James W.

COMPANY "H" OF ELLENSBURG

Alfred C. Steinman, Capt.
Samuel C. Davidson, 1st Lt.
Edward E. Southern, 2nd Lt.
John J. Charlton, 1st Sgt.
Luke L. Seely, QM Sgt.
Ralph Brown, Sgt.
Holly V. Hill, Sgt.
William O. McDowell, Sgt.
Robert Murray, Sgt.

Willis L. Gott, Corp.
John R. Hoskins, Corp.
George M. Hunter, Corp.
James J. Putman, Corp.
James Shaw, Corp.
Charles A. Swift, Corp.
Jos. R. Whitchurch, Musician
Charles A. Morgan, Artificer
Edwin Barker, Wagoner

PRIVATES

Adkins, John A.
Alm, John A.
Ballow, Fred L.
Barnett, Howard E.
Blankenship, Stephen S.
Bruce, Robert
Brusted, John
Bullack, William S.
Burlingham, George M.
Callman, Frederick
Campbell, Clinton H.
Chambers, William
Clark, George A.
Clark, John R.
Costello, Israel F.
Craig, William
Davis, Clarke E.
Eiselstein, Charles H.
Ellis, John S.
Ells, Arthur H.
Eno, Joseph
Fitzhenry, George W.
Forrest, Martin
Fraser, Alexander

Frenette, Louis G.
George, William
Gorganier, Bert
Grandin, John L.
Griffen, Stephen A.
Hagenson, Charles
Harner, Phillip W.
Harris, James A.
Hersey, Byron E.
Hill, William T.
Hovey, George W.
Hovey, Robert
Johnson, Edward T.
Jones, Francis B.
Junge, Carsten H.
Lundy, John
Martin, Van Rancelar
McCabe, William V.
Mitchell, Emmett C.
Moeckel, Arno H.
Morrison, Caddy
Nelson, Fred
Nilssen, Abel
Paulist, Albert J.

Pearson, William M.
Putman, Lee M.
Richardson, Thomas
Ridge, Arthur F.
Ritchey, William F.
Robbins, Abraham L.
Roberts, Paul
Romane, Byars E.
Rothlisberger, Frank
Russell, Solomon
Shepherd, Sherman
Sigler, Victor E.
Smith, George S.
Snyder, Arthur E.
Thorp, Winford E.
Vomacka, Joseph
VanAlstine, Harry R.
Walsh, James W.
Ward, William
Wenzel, Robert C.
Williams, Thomas
Woods, Clyde Z.
Wright, Burrell B.

COMPANY "I" OF WALLA WALLA

Wm. B. Buffam, Capt.
Morrow C. Gustin, 1st Lt.
Thos. D. S. Hart, 2nd Lt.
Edwin S. Buffum, 1st Sgt.
Charles F. Buffum, QM Sgt.
Edwin R. Collins, Sgt.
David R. Roche, Sgt.
William Ruddock, Sgt.

Claude M. Berry, Corp.
William F. Crowe, Corp.
Lemuel C. Goodwin, Corp.
Miles C. Kyger, Corp.
Neil McDougall, Corp.
Chas. W. McKean, Corp.
Clinton F. Buffum, Musician

PRIVATES

Abbott, Donald L.
Amos, Andrew T.
Anderson, Edgar H.
Angell, Herbert
Barber, Ernest L.
Barker, James C.
Borland, Bert
Brewer, John W.
Broughton, Milford H.
Burrows, Albert J.
Buttz, Joseph W.
Carlyle, Allen E.
Cockrill, James B.
Cramer, Don C.
Cromwell, Ira R.
Crusker, Myra
Dawson, Albert
Debus, Harry
Derry, James M.
Ellison, Frank J.
Embru, Burr S.
Faris, Bluford M.
Fisher, Ernest H. A.
Foster, Albert
Gates, William C.
Glenn, Alexander W.
Goldman, Ben F.
Goodwin, Joseph W.
Graham, John A.
Harding, Sherman C.
Hardy, William H.
Harer, Edward F.

Harman, Charles W.
Hart, Nat B.
Henningsen, William
Holmes, Floyd W.
Howard, Fred C.
Howard, Harry W.
Irwin, Charles A.
Ingram, Morton M.
Jeans, Earl A.
Johnson, Fred
Johnson, William K.
Jones, Daniel J.
Knudson, Albert L.
Kohl, Conrad
Kohl, Thomas A.
Kyger, Donald T. Jr.
Lane, Henry
Leroux, John H. Jr.
Maumgartner, Peter
McCready, Sylvester C.
McDonald, Eugene A.
McDonald, John H.
McDonald, Kenneth
Medley, James F.
Miller, William B.
Myers, Fred O.
Naught, John L.
Nicholson, Newton J.
O'Neill, George W.
Orselli, Edward
Painter, Charles S.

Painter, Roy R.
Palmer, Charles
Parker, Frank N.
Parkes, Christopher A.
Parmelee, Guy M.
Perry, Edward H.
Proudfoot, Rolla R.
Preston, Charles S.
Ray, Fred
Ricardo, Victor J.
Rice, Ernest H.
Rice, Lewis
Robertson, George G.
Rose, John W.
Sander, Charles
Sanford, Fred
Shackleton, Robert C.
Shuck, Benjamin F.
Shumway, Charles G.
Skaar, Elirt A.
Smith, Allen Jr.
Smith, Frank W.
Stapf, Godfrey
Sullivan, William T.
Titworth, Edward
Turner, Gary
Walker, Virgil A.
Ward, Fred A.
Ward, George W.
Ward, William J.
Wright, John F.

COMPANY "K" Of WAITSBURG

Charles T. Smith, Capt.
Jesse H. Arnold, 1st Lt.
John B. Caldwell, 2nd Lt.
Edward Kimmel, 1st Sgt.
Arthur Roberts, QM Sgt.
William Chenowith, Sgt.
Thompson W. McKinney, Sgt.
Otto B. Smith, Sgt.

James Williams, Sgt.
James B. Chenowith, Corp.
Frank W. Cobb, Corp.
Oscar M. Haynes, Corp.
Charles R. James, Corp.
John H. Jones, Corp.
George N. Brand, Musician
Alonzo N. Hanson, Musician

PRIVATES

Arnold, Moses E.
Baker, Frank
Barnes, Joshua
Barnett, Guy W.
Breeze, Oliver O.
Broyles, John G.
Bucklin, Robert E.
Buhmann, Fred C.
Caldwell, Joel C.
Calkins, Carroll C.
Christensen, Alfred B.
Collier, Herbert L.
Covert, George E.
Crick, Jesse
Daugherty, William H.
Dawson, George T.
Denny, Otis L.
Doyle, Martin J.
Egan, John P.
Foss, John E.
Garnett, Robert
Gerking, Alfred O.
Gilderman, Frank
Ground, Edward J.
Hammill, Isaac H.

Hanson, Peter C.
Haughton, Otto C.
Hazleton, Ralph R.
Henry, Alexander G.
Hill, Leslie A.
Hinchcliffe, William
Johnson, Charles S.
Johnson, Nelson P.
Kennedy, Thomas J. L.
Keys, William J.
Larson, Olaf
Leonard, Edgar H.
Libby, William B.
Ludwig, Eli L.
MacKay, Harry H.
McHugh, William S.
McKenzie, James J.
McMillem, William
Mendonce, John E.
Meyer, Henry O.
Mikkenson, Lewis E.
Mitchem, Charles
Moore, John D.
Munroe, Thomas L.
Newman, Lewis P.

O'Donnell, John
Palmer, Ora T.
Parton, Frank M.
Perkins, Howard S.
Pratt, Frank J. Jr.
Roberts, Samuel N.
Robertson, David H.
Rose, Frank L.
Schaffer, Harry F.
Scholtz, Fred M.
Scholtz, John M.
Scott, Ferdinand
Skeels, Frank H.
Sweazey, A. J.
Thurnquist, Charles J.
Toellner, August
Tucker, William L.
Wakefield, Luther M.
Walker, Oliver
Wickersham, Frank D.
Wilkinson, Fred
Witt, Clement B.
Wold, Charles
Zuger, Charles

COMPANY "L" OF SPOKANE

Joseph M. Moore, Capt.
John E. Ballaine, 1st Lt.
Charles E. Nosler, 2nd Lt.
William G. Kelly, QM Sgt.
Joseph W. Childs, Sgt.
Leroy L. Childs, Sgt.
Thomas Doody, Sgt.

Fred B. Slee, Sgt.
Will G. Adams, Corp.
Warren A. Harper, Corp.
Reno D. Hoppe, Corp.
Wm. Schermerhorn, Corp.
Howard Woodard, Corp.

PRIVATES

Adams, Leonard F.
Allen, Hector W.
Anderson, Charles G.
Arant, Melvin R.
Arrowsmith, John B.
Baldwin, Edward A.
Bowman, Robert E.
Briggs, William M.
Burggrabe, George H.
Butler, James J.
Campbell, Will O.
Carson, Charles A.
Christie, Charles A.
Condry, Martin H.
Craig, Morary J.
Cusick, Hugh
Diehl, Robert H.
Dixon, Walter A.
Dow, Robert D.
Drake, Ernest E.
Dunn, Charles A.
Durgin, David H.
Egbert, William H.

Eklind, William
Ellis, Carson E.
Ennis, Edward R.
Harrison, Henry K.
Hause, Thomas T.
Hedger, Charles
Hedger, George E.
Higby, Otis L.
Hinkle, J. Grant
Hunt, Truman R.
Jardine, John E.
Jensen, Samuel
King, Fred L.
Lamb, Edward
Mattucks, Alexander H.
McChesney, John S.
Merriam, Frank L.
Miller, Charles O.
Newcomb, George A.
Perry, John
Pruitt, John
Pullen, Marshall W.
Raub, James B.

Ray, Allen
Rhodes, Milton
Roberts, Clarence V.
Rose, Arthur
Sanders, Alfred O.
Schmidt, Charles W.
Scott, Allen R.
Shea, Patrick
Shidler, Charles J.
Smith, Charles H.
Smith, Edward
Smith, John
Stroud, Harry R. S.
Tatro, Orphius U.
Truax, Edward H.
Vaughn, Herbert C.
Vaughn, Orlando P.
Warren, Lee G.
Watrous, Charles F.
Wells, John H.
Willis, John W.
Winter, Mortimer J.

COMPANY "M" OF CENTRALIA

John E. Boyer, Capt.
George M. Dreher, 1st Lt.
Russell T. Hazard, 2nd Lt.
Ben F. Rhodes, 1st Sgt.
Ralph R. Philbrick, QM Sgt.
John W. Connors, Sgt.
Seth R. Jackson, Sgt.
George D. Robertson, Sgt.

William Scales, Sgt.
Albert A. Cooper, Corp.
Jerome D. Garland, Corp.
Ross Kahler, Corp.
Thayer Lamb, Corp.
William E. Miller, Corp.
Roy W. Squires, Corp.
Heber I. Matthews, Musician

PRIVATES

Adams, John F.
Ammann, Charles E.
Anderson, Albert C.
Anderson, Robert S.
Augstein, Charles E.
Badger, John W.
Ballew, Fred C.
Barnett, John O.
Battles, Charles M.
Bauer, Charles L.
Bay, William W.
Bernier, Joseph P.
Bingham, William O.
Bunnell, Horace L.
Cahill, John J.
Cannon, John J.
Carlile, John B.
Carlson, Carl E.
Churchill, Nelson
Clock, William H.
Cruver, William F.
Custer, William A.
DeLacy, Walter H.
Eddy, George C.

Eshelman, Charles B.
Flint, Moses DeLoss
Fowler, William C.
Gohres, Jacob A.
Harbridge, Albert J.
Haring, Walter A.
Harkins, William T.
Hazzard, Oliver P. M.
Hoban, Thomas P.
Houser, John
Hovies, Foster
Hyatt, John P.
James, Bert
Knisley, William H.
Leek, Albert H.
Lingelbach, Fred S.
Lundberg, Godfrey E.
Marshall, Warner
McDerby, Floyd E.
McGuire, James
McLean, Harry C.
Mohler, Emmett S.
Morris, Oliver S.

Norton, Joseph E.
Orendorff, Edward J.
Parker, Ernest A.
Parker, Frank H.
Pierce, J. Rowland
Powers, Claude C.
Raven, Charles
Roberts, John I.
Rockwell, Frank L.
Rogers, Wilford D.
Rose, George H.
Sagers, Frank H.
Scheidel, William N.
Selley, Alexander
Shorey, Fred C.
Simonds, George W.
Smith, William H.
Spooner, Clifford J.
Swaisgood, Andrew C.
Usher, John
Whitaker, Fred D.
Winters, James C.
Young, Truman P.

UNASSIGNED RECRUITS OF FIRST WASHINGTON VOLUNTEERS

Ahlbaum, George G.	Fleming, William P.	Morrison, Robert T.
Allen, Fred M.	Freeman, Edward	Murnby, Clifford M.
Anderson, Albert	Gower, George L. Jr.	Nelson, Andrew
Andrews, William C.	Greek, James F.	O'Hara, Joseph
Baglin, John D.	Greenwood, Lewis C.	Owen, Albert H.
Beckman, Swen C.	Gustofson, Gust	Pike, John M.
Blair, Albert H.	Haigh, Gilbert	Porter, Arthur R.
Bowman, Benjamin	Hansen, Walter M.	Rice, Egbert C.
Boyer, George W.	Harrington, John L.	Robbins, Charles A.
Britton, Robert F.	Harson, George F.	Rose, Ira E.
Bryant, Alexander	Harty, George W.	Schander, Frederick W.
Bucklen, Walter R.	Haskin, Walter R.	Schlater, William
Buckley, Joseph L.	Heyburn, John B.	Secrist, Clyde
Button, Ellsworth	Hillman, Charles	Seivers, Henry J.
Carson, Lars Erich	Homer, Reginald H.	Selnar, Hugh L.
Castles, Simon	Hubbard, Clement C.	Sharpe, Stephen W.
Caughlin, John A.	Jameison, Fred O.	Shaw, Andrew
Chrystal, Robert A.	James, Charles A.	Simonds, Ralph W.
Clark, Harvey	Jodney, Stanley	Simpson, Leonard L.
Cook, William B.	Kane, John	Sly, Robert L.
Crowley, John F.	Klein, John C.	Smith, Harvey R.
Curley, Edward M.	Lee, Charles J.	Stephans, Carroll
Dye, Robert T.	Logan, Thomas	Stewart, Joseph W.
Eastman, Ralph E.	Lynch, Christopher J.	Thompson, Minion E. Jr.
Edgecomb, Brenton	Marks, George E.	Thornton, Oliver O.
Everett, William C.	McArthur, John W.	Wilson, Andrew
Farlin, David O.	McCauley, James	Woodbridge, Harvey B.
Fay, Frank	McNulty, Thomas F.	Wyse, Frank E.
Fay, Walter A.	Melville, William H.	Zuppe, George
Feeney, Dennis C.		

ROSTER OF INDEPENDENT BATTALION, VOLUNTEERS
FIELD AND STAFF

Edward H. Fox, Major, Commanding Battalion

James N. Bocock, 1st Lieut., Assistant Surgeon

NON-COMMISSIONED STAFF

Kenneth G. Kincaid, Hospital Steward

COMPANY "A" OF TACOMA

James Ross, Captain

George L. Smith, 1st Lieut.

John C. R. Cootes, 2nd Lieut.

Earl Clifford Smith, 1st Sgt.

Frank W. Spear, QM Sgt.

George W. Edwards, Sgt.

Fred E. King, Sgt

George Major, Sgt.

James F. McClure, Sgt.

Edward Bennett, Corp.

Marshall E. Carrier, Corp.

Gilbert W. Caughran, Corp.

Bruce Cotton, Corp.

James E. Deck, Corp.

Benjamin B. Harlan, Corp.

Frank J. Iredell, Corp.

Fred T. Lawrence, Corp.

Jesse R. Mills, Corp.

John L. Nelson, Corp.

William S. Page, Corp.

Clifford Viant, Corp.

PRIVATES

Adams, Joe B.

Anderson, Walter M.

Baker, Royal F.

Bailey, Charles B.

Ballier, Charles H.

Bice, Arthur H.

Bice, C. M.

Bowen, Frank W.

Brittan, George

Butler, Frank

Cardinal, Melville

Cooper, Frank

Covert, John J.

Darling, Hugh H.

Drake, Harry J.

Ebert, William A.

Edwards, Walter D.

Epsen, Andrew

Fleckinger, William

Fleming, Frank

Froggartt, William H.

Galligan, Addison H.

Gendrom, Frank

Geoghegan, John J.

Granger, Orley C.

Hale, Mark T.

Hanson, Henry

Hart, Edwin

Hawkins, Stewart A.

Herman, Meyer K.

Hill, George M.

Hopkins, Elmer E.

Huddleston, Lyman G.

Hunt, Timothy H.

Johns, Isaac N.

Knight, Daniel J.

Lackie, James H.

Lilley, Robert J.

Lindberg, Frederick

Logasa, Max

Lozier, Eugene

McEwing, James

McKinney, John W.

McLaughlin, Patrick

Mead, George H.

Melby, William

Meyers, Louis H.

Morris, John H.

Motley, Wilfred R.

Nordstrom, David A.

O'Brien, Maurice

Osterborg, Julius H.

Parker, George L.

Parrish, James O.

Paulding, Roy C.

Paulin, Raymond R.

Pence, Ira W.

Petrie, Willard H.

Pigeon, Walter

Qurim, Peter

Reed, William M.

Riley, Thomas B.

Rohmann, John M.

Ryder, Walter

Schesley, John P.

Schomburg, Charles A.

Shelton, William

Simmonson, Edwin

Smith, George H.

Sparrow, Joseph W.

Straight, William A.

Stutsman, Charles W.

Tate, Frank N.

Taylor, Elton A.

Thompson, George D.

Thompson, James E.

Ugland, Kris

Van Dame, John C.

Vesey, Harry G.

Votaw, Ralph C.

Watson, George

Weberling, Gustave

Wells, Hubert F.

Whist, Axle L.

Williams, E. Leonard

Young, Forrest G.

COMPANY "B" OF NEW WHATCOM

Edward E. Hardin, Captain
Elmer B. Crum, 1st Lieut.
Richard W. Ridings, 2nd. Lieut.
William H. Hilderbrand, 1st Sgt.
Julius H. Bigelow, QM Sgt.
Arthur W. Clothier, Sgt.
Charles E. Flint, Sgt.
Charles V. Johnson, Sgt.
Augustus Moran, Sgt.
Frank J. Carpenter, Corp.
Alexander Colburn, Corp.
Walter Fouts, Corp.
John G. Glowe, Corp.

Victor Julian, Corp.
Arthur L. Keesling, Corp.
William S. McGuire, Corp.
Thomas J. McVey, Corp.
Henry A. Morgan, Corp.
William H. Parcels, Corp.
Frank Rabidean, Corp.
Herbert J. Smith, Corp.
Willard M. Allen, Musician.
Frederick D. Pontius, Musician
Harold J. Reynolds, Wagoner
Charles R. Bush, Artificer

PRIVATEES

Anderson, Andrew K.
Anderson, Charles
Archer, George
Athearn, Robert H.
Barber, Morse
Batchelder, John
Bearse, James M.
Belkle, Carl
Bissell, Lawrence B.
Bleeck, Ernest F.
Braton, John W.
Bruce, Walter S.
Buchanan, John L
Button, Frank
Church, Albert E.
Cook, Dan F.
Coleman, Elmer E.
Cowden, Arthur E.
Day, Joseph W.
Dewey, Frank B.
Egan, Joseph J.
Evans, James A.
Faber, Adonis
Foster, Charles E.
Frazier, Guy L.
Fritz, Albert S.
Fritz, William H.

Gannon, Francis S.
Glenn, Leonard R.
Golder, William L.
Goyett, Benjamin
Griffen, Richard
Hall, Shirley A.
Hall, Elmer S.
Hart, William M.
Haskin, Silas A.
Hess, Abraham N.
Kaden, Henry
Kikendall, William A.
King, Hiram F.
King, John S.
Kress, Lee
Landfehr, Henry W.
Love, Henry J.
Luke, John
Maneval, Percy R. W.
Marr, Ben F.
Marr, Fred B.
Maxson, Alvin J.
McKay, Alfred F.
McLean, John H.
McMillen, George W.
Mead, William D.
Mercy, Francis C.

Miller, Henry A.
Moran, Bert
Morgan, Oscar E.
Niles, Robert F.
Norton, Luke W.
O'Connor, Charley
Perry, Alexander
Pettit, Edmund R.
Pickens, Cowan R.
Roberts, Fred
Savings, Arthur
Smith, Harvey
Spivey, Robert D.
Sterling, Marquis Jay
Taylor, George C.
Thacker, George S.
Thompson, Marchais A.
Thompson, Roy G.
Thompson, Samuel E.
Tyson, James R.
Ulrich, William
Vail, Charles S.
Whitney, Ernest
Wilson, George J.
Wilson, James
Zimmerman, Max

COMPANY "C" OF POMEROY

Harry St George, Captain
Edwin Gibson, 1st Lieut.
William E. Greene, 2nd Lieut.
Edward M. Pomeroy, 1st Sgt.
Edwin W. Weinburg, QM Sgt.
George N. Anzman, Sgt.
Louis F. Buchet, Sgt.
William R. Davis, Sgt.
Herbert A. Stiles, Sgt.
Byron B. Bradley, Corp.
Joseph D. R. Brown, Corp.
Reid Davis, Corp.
Frank P. DeVinney, Corp.

Frank C. Dumond, Corp.
William S. Elliott, Corp.
Charles E. Ewart, Corp.
Otto T. Greene, Corp.
Jack E. Harding, Corp.
Henry S. Matheson, Corp.
William T. Mitchell, Corp.
Edward R. Sutherland, Corp.
Raymond J. Stevenson, Musician
John F. Neal, Musician
Franklin C. Sellars, Artificer
William M. Johnston, Wagoner

PRIVATEES

Alexander, Max J.
Allen, Victor G.
Anderson, Victor
Barnes, Hazzard P.
Berry, Orville D.
Bond, Robert
Bonney, Pearl A.
Borecky, Lades J.
Brantner, Charles M.
Brunton, Thomas C.
Buckley, John C. A.
Chapman, Alleson W.
Chard, Oliver D.
Childus, George S.
Conway, Patrick J.
Corey, Charles D.
Cyrus, Emmanuel
Danes, Elmer
Dodd, Markiss B.
East, George T.
Elliott, Mackenzie
Entz, Peter Jr.
Everly, Richard C.
Feise, Ludwig
Ferris, M. L.
Fetters, Horatio
Fite, Walter
Foley, Michael

Galloway, John C.
Gilder, Charles M.
Goggins, Henry S.
Gonzales, Charles
Hadley, Charles A.
Hawkins, Jacob B.
Heller, Charles A.
Herndon, James A.
House, Thomas
Hoy, Samuel O.
Jacks, James S.
Jackson, Charles F.
Johnson, George W.
Johnson, Millard T.
Jones, William L.
Kenney, Peter
Koubik, Albert
Kruch, Louis
Larson, James P.
Leighton, John E.
Long, Clarence W.
Markel, Joseph
Martin, Fred L.
McClure, Lawrence D.
McFarland, John P.
McKee, Alexander W. Jr.
McMartin, Burr
Messenger, Frank V.

Montgomery, Oscar E.
Moore, Frank R.
Nolan, John J.
O'Brien, William
Patterson, George S.
Peterson, Frederick
Peterson, John
Peterson, John H. N.
Pluss, Frederick, L.
Potter, Frank G.
Richey, John F.
Rogers, Walter B.
Ronan, Vincent R.
Ruark, Joseph
Satterthwaite, Adolf
Smith, Beauford B.
Snider, Edwin C.
Stephenson, Elisha
Tate, Leonard W.
Thomas, James W.
Thompson, Earl E.
Vollmer, George J.
Watthall, Joseph F.
Weed, William J.
Wheatcroft, John
Winger, Martin R.
Wooten, Martin R.
Youngs, Frank

COMPANY "D" OF WATERVILLE

Percy G. Maltbie, Captain
Edward Johnson, 1st Lieut.
John N. Keisling, 2nd Lieut.
James J. Morrissey, 1st Sgt.
Fred McDermott, QM Sgt
Volney H. Eddy, Sgt.
John R. Mason, Sgt.
Michael D. Nagle, Sgt.
Edwin R. Tobey, Sgt.
James Casey, Corp.
John F. Conley, Corp.
Michael Connors, Corp.
Charles J. Edwards, Corp.

Charles A. James, Corp.
Jesse P. Johnson, Corp.
Richard F. Kelly, Corp.
John S. Mulkey, Corp.
George A. Pitcher, Corp.
David S. Sawyer, Corp.
William A. Thompson, Corp.
Peter Wheeler, Corp.
Frederick A. Fenton, Musician
Homer Wisner, Musician
Frank Harle, Artificer
Edward C. Berry, Wagoner.

PRIVATES

Almas, Wellington E.
Anderson, Emil
Anderson, Raymond N.
Armstrong, Frank E.
Armstrong, Willis
Bean, Thomas
Behan, William T.
Bennett, Walter C.
Betts, Clarence E.
Bousquet, Arthur A.
Boyle, John P.
Brennan, John A.
Brown, Edward J.
Brown, George W.
Byford, Enoch V.
Cahill, William
Cash, Samuel F.
Christie, George W.
Coe, Sylvester K.
Craik, Robert J.
Crisp, Albert W.
Cusick, John W.
Davis, Irving
Delaplain, Edward O.
Devere, William

Eastman, Elmer C
Edgar, William T.
Ewing, Henry S.
Farmer, Albert H.
Fenton, James H.
German, James W.
Gorman, James
Grubb, Harry
Hamilton, John
Heitman, Isaac
Henderson, Wilson
Holbrook, John F.
Holman, Joseph
Johnson, Carl
Landis, Frank W.
Liddell, John
McDonald, Percy
McDonald, Maurice V.
Mickleby, Theodore A.
Millhouse, Julius L.
Murphy, Hugh
Murphy, William J.
Nichols, Allen
Olson, Walter C
Parker, Paul B.

Paton, George
Perry, John M.
Peterson, Nels
Pickens, Charles E.
Porter, George H.
Reilly, John P.
Riggs, Charles H.
Rucker, Peter
Saxton, Charles D.
Scott, Oliver
Sickel, George C.
Smith, Eugene
Smith, William
Snyder, Curtis C.
Stiles, Henry
Stine, Henry E.
Storey, John C.
Thomke, Orrin W. F.
Williams, Thomas E.
Wolters, John C.
Wooster, Jesse E.
Wormley, William M.
Young, Thomas L.
Zahren, Leroy
Zimmerman, Charles L.